40431

National Library of Canada | Bibliothèque nationale du Canada

CANADIAN THESES ON MICROFICHE

THÈSES CANADIENNES SUR MICROFICHE

NAME OF AUTHOR/*NOM DE L'AUTEUR* Jacqueline S. Ismael

TITLE OF THESIS/*TITRE DE LA THÈSE* The Politics of Social Change in Kuwait

UNIVERSITY/*UNIVERSITÉ* University of Alberta

DEGREE FOR WHICH THESIS WAS PRESENTED/ *GRADE POUR LEQUEL CETTE THÈSE FUT PRÉSENTÉE* Ph.D.

YEAR THIS DEGREE CONFERRED/*ANNÉE D'OBTENTION DE CE GRADE* Spring 1979

NAME OF SUPERVISOR/*NOM DU DIRECTEUR DE THÈSE* Dr. Baha Abu Laban

Permission is hereby granted to the NATIONAL LIBRARY OF CANADA to microfilm this thesis and to lend or sell copies of the film.

The author reserves other publication rights, and neither the thesis nor extensive extracts from it may be printed or otherwise reproduced without the author's written permission.

L'autorisation est, par la présente, accordée à la BIBLIOTHÈQUE NATIONALE DU CANADA de microfilmer cette thèse et de prêter ou de vendre des exemplaires du film.

L'auteur se réserve les autres droits de publication; ni la thèse ni de longs extraits de celle-ci ne doivent être imprimés ou autrement reproduits sans l'autorisation écrite de l'auteur.

DATED/*DATÉ* Dec. 20, 1978 SIGNED/*SIGNÉ* Jacqueline S. Ismael

PERMANENT ADDRESS/*RÉSIDENCE FIXE* Comp. 27, Site 7, S.S. #1
Calgary, Alberta T2M 4N3

NL-91 (3-74)

National Library of Canada

Cataloguing Branch
Canadian Theses Division

Ottawa, Canada
K1A 0N4

Bibliothèque nationale du Canada

Direction du catalogage
Division des thèses canadiennes

NOTICE

The quality of this microfiche is heavily dependent upon the quality of the original thesis submitted for microfilming. Every effort has been made to ensure the highest quality of reproduction possible.

If pages are missing, contact the university which granted the degree.

Some pages may have indistinct print especially if the original pages were typed with a poor typewriter ribbon or if the university sent us a poor photocopy.

Previously copyrighted materials (journal articles, published tests, etc.) are not filmed.

Reproduction in full or in part of this film is governed by the Canadian Copyright Act, R.S.C. 1970, c. C-30. Please read the authorization forms which accompany this thesis.

THIS DISSERTATION
HAS BEEN MICROFILMED
EXACTLY AS RECEIVED

AVIS

La qualité de cette microfiche dépend grandement de la qualité de la thèse soumise au microfilmage. Nous avons tout fait pour assurer une qualité supérieure de reproduction.

S'il manque des pages, veuillez communiquer avec l'université qui a conféré le grade.

La qualité d'impression de certaines pages peut laisser à désirer, surtout si les pages originales ont été dactylographiées à l'aide d'un ruban usé ou si l'université nous a fait parvenir une photocopie de mauvaise qualité.

Les documents qui font déjà l'objet d'un droit d'auteur (articles de revue, examens publiés, etc.) ne sont pas microfilmés.

La reproduction, même partielle, de ce microfilm est soumise à la Loi canadienne sur le droit d'auteur, SRC 1970, c. C-30. Veuillez prendre connaissance des formules d'autorisation qui accompagnent cette thèse.

LA THÈSE A ÉTÉ
MICROFILMÉE TELLE QUE
NOUS L'AVONS REÇUE

NL-339 (3/77)

THE UNIVERSITY OF ALBERTA

THE POLITICS OF SOCIAL CHANGE IN KUWAIT

by

© JACQUELINE S. ISMAEL

A THESIS
SUBMITTED TO THE FACULTY OF GRADUATE STUDIES
AND RESEARCH IN PARTIAL FULFILMENT
OF THE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE DEGREE
OF DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

DEPARTMENT OF SOCIOLOGY

EDMONTON, ALBERTA
Spring, 1979

THE UNIVERSITY OF ALBERTA

FACULTY OF GRADUATE STUDIES AND RESEARCH

The undersigned certify that they have read, and recommend to the Faculty of Graduate Studies and Research, for acceptance, a thesis entitled "THE POLITICS OF SOCIAL CHANGE IN KUWAIT" submitted by Jacqueline S. Ismael in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in Sociology.

Baha Abu Laban
Supervisor

Arthur K. Davis

Janet L. Abu-Lughod
External Examiner

Date Nov. 23, 1978

To:

Abu Shereen

ABSTRACT

Contemporary Kuwait is one of the super-affluent, oil-rich sheikhdoms of the so-called Fourth World. Kuwait, like other nations in this category, occupies an anomalous position in terms of theories of development, underdevelopment and dependency. It is a single-resource dependent, capital-surplus nation, with one of the highest per capita standards of living in the world. By applying dependency theory to Kuwait, this study attempts to address the following questions: 1) the nature of class dynamics in pre-oil Kuwait from the historical perspective, beginning with the foundation and development of the community in the eighteenth century; 2) whether the process of the development of underdevelopment is an historical experience of Kuwait; 3) whether dependency theory is relevant to the study of the capital surplus society; that is, does it provide the analytic categories for examining the historical development of contemporary Kuwait, and for inter-relating the multifaceted features of continuity and change; 4) the nature of class dynamics in contemporary Kuwait. The central focus of the study, then, is not upon the international dynamics of dependency as an imperialist pheomenon, but upon its internal dynamics as a class phenomenon.

Brought down from the level of international analysis to the level of social class analysis, this study addressed three theoretical issues in dependency theory: 1) whether dependent societies constitute a homogeneous category in terms of the concept of mode of production; 2) does peripheral capitalism operate by a different dynamic than capitalism in the developed industrial nations; 3) is there an objective link between peripheral capitalism and central capitalism that defines the structural dynamics of dependency. By applying dependency theory to a case of capital surplus rather than capital shortage, the dynamics of dependency were identified in terms of the class dialectic between peripheral capital and marginal labour. The identification of this dynamic contributes to the conceptual clarification of dependency theory in terms of the above issues, and helps to resolve the question of the role of capital shortage in terms of the perpetuation of dependency.

PREFACE

This study of Kuwait is divided into two sections, besides a theoretical introduction and conclusion. Part I examines the historical development of Kuwait in the pre-oil period (c. 1700-1948). This section relies upon historical analysis, and some comments on the sources may be useful to the reader. The basic sources included: 1) studies of the history of the Gulf in general, in English; the studies on Kuwait's history available in English are very limited; 2) studies of the Gulf in general and Kuwait in particular in Arabic; here the study of Kuwait's history or specific aspects of it is more extensive; and it is in these works, some of them obscure and not readily available even in the archives of the Middle East, that documents pertaining to Kuwait's history have been preserved.

Because some of these documents have been unavailable in English previously, appear unknown even to Arab scholars, and are critical to the study of Kuwait's historical development, I have translated and reproduced them in detail either in the text, or for lengthier documents, in the Appendices. The same is true of some British documents not previously published or cited in published works. Also, much of the detailed information provided in this section appears to be unknown to Western scholars studying the Gulf and is not readily available in Arabic or English sources. In all cases, the detail provided in the text as well as in the Appendices was selected on the basis of two criteria: 1) was it relevant to the study; 2) was it available to scholars.

Part II of the study, the post-oil period of Kuwait (c. 1950 to 1975), relies primarily upon demograhic data collected by the Kuwait Central Statistical Office, economic data collected by the Central Bank of Kuwait, and the two five year plans prepared by the Planning Board of the Ministry of Planning. These documents were made available to me by the Government of Kuwait which kindly facilitated my field research there by making its offices open to me. The data on the shareholding companies was also collected during my field research and is provided in detail in the Appendices.

To my knowledge this is the first comprehensive analysis of this data within any formal theoretical framework of social development (except for my own M.A. thesis, which applied a modernization model), and the first study of Kuwaiti development within the framework of a dialectical model.

The Library of Congress system of transliteration from Arabic was utilized in the citation of Arabic sources, with one modification: diacritical marks were dropped to facilitate typing. In addition, the transformation of dates given in accordance with the Muslim lunar calendar was based on Hassubi Abdul Wahhab, al-Taqwim al-Islami (The Islamic Calendar), (Baghdad: al-Irshad Press, 1973).

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I wish to express my appreciation to my adviser, Dr. Baha Abu Laban, whose guidance and encouragement provided the scholarly discipline that brought this project to its conclusion. Also, I wish to thank the members of my committee for their invaluable contribution and the Canada Council which provided a doctoral fellowship that facilitated my studies and research. Finally, I wish to thank Mrs. Viola Ankerstjerne who lost a lot of sleep typing this dissertation.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF TABLES xv

LIST OF CHARTS xvii

CHAPTER I: INTRODUCTION 1

The Development of Underdevelopment: Dependency 5

The Social Structure of Dependency: The Dependency Syndrome. 13

Dependence and Social Class 17

Dependency in Perspective 25

This Study 26

PART I: PRE-OIL KUWAIT

CHAPTER II: THE ORIGINS AND STRUCTURAL DEVELOPMENT OF KUWAIT 32

The Bedouin Basis of Social Structure . . . 33

Bedouin Origins 40

The Structural Basis of Kuwaiti Settlement . 47

Economic Organization 51
Political Organization 58

The Changing Balance of Power: 1762-1896 . 60

The Emigration of al-Khalifah, 1766 . . . 61
The Persian Seige of Basra, 1775. 64
Development of the Boat Construction Industry. 66
Commerce: The Transition to External Markets 71
Production: The Transition to Units of Scale 73
Politics: The Transition of Power . . 77

CHAPTER III: BRITISH GULF POLICY AND KUWAIT IN THE 19th CENTURY 80

Britain in the Persian Gulf 80

Britain and Kuwait 90

Britain and Mubarak 101

Conclusion 118

CHAPTER IV: THE UNDERDEVELOPMENT OF KUWAIT 119

Kuwait Under Mubarak 120

Kuwait Between Two World Wars 132

Capital Accumulation/Expropriation . . 133
The Political Economy of Pearling 135
The Political Economy of Dhow Commerce 144
The Polarization of Capital and Labour 149

Independence/Dependence 153
The Question of Boundaries . . . 154
The Challenge to Autocracy . . . 159

Oil: The New Integration 173

PART II: POST-OIL KUWAIT

CHAPTER V: THE NEW INTEGRATION: THE CONTINUITY OF DEPENDENCY 177

The Changing Structure of Autocracy . . . 178

The Executive 181
The National Assembly 186

The Changing Structure of Peripheral Integration 188

Oil and the Capital Surplus Economy 202

The Financial Structure 210

Dependency and Class in the Capital Surplus Society 215

CHAPTER VI: THE TRANSFORMATION OF KUWAIT 219

The Economic Transformation 219

The Transformation of Labour 235

The Demographic Transformation 246

Politics of the Demographic Transformation 251
Dialectics of the Demographic Transformation 258
The Exploitation of Immigrant Labour 265

Conclusion 269

CHAPTER VII: THE POLITICS OF STRATIFICATION: SOCIAL CHANGE AND SOCIAL CONTROL IN THE WELFARE STATE 271

The Politics of Stratification in the Welfare State 271

The Rationalization of Social Control: Planning. 279

Human Resource Development. 284

The Educational Hierarchy. 285
Vocational Education 296
Professional vs. Vocational Education 304

The Second Five Year Plan 306

CHAPTER VIII: CONCLUSIONS 317

BIBLIOGRAPHY 336

APPENDIX 1 356

The Law of Divers 357

APPENDIX 2 376

Relations Between His Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom and the Sheikh of Koweit 377

APPENDIX 3 439

Note on the Shabiba Movement of Iraq: Its Aims and Methods 440

APPENDIX 4 449

Councils of Ministers of Kuwait 1962 to 1976 450

Details on Selected Kuwaiti Shareholding Companies (Public and Private Subscription) 457

LIST OF TABLES

1 Distribution of the Pearling Crews' Income . . . 137

2 Distribution of the Merchant Crews' Income . . . 148

3 Imports and Exports of Kuwait by Mode of Transport, 1935-38 150

4 Participation of Pre-Oil Elites in Cabinets and Major Shareholding Corporations 183

5 Families That Hold Membership in Three or More Boards of Major Shareholding Corporations 185

6 Actual State Revenues and Expenditures 1962/63-1976/77 202

7 Government Expenditures as a Percentage of Non-Petroleum Gross Domestic Product 1966/67 - 1974/75 205

8 Balance of Payments 1966/67, 1970/71, 1974/75 . 208

9 Kuwait Foreign Investment 1970 and 1975 209

10 State Expenditure on Property Acquisition and Revenue from Sales of State Owned Property 1964/65 - 1971/72. 223

11 Gross Domestic Product by Industrial Origin 1967/68 - 1975/76 230

12 Summary of Domestic Expenditure 1972/73 - 1975/76 232

13 Percentage Distribution of Active Labour Force by Division of Economic Activity in Census Years 235

14 Percentage Distribution of Labour Forces by Occupational Divisions and Economic Sectors, 1975 239

15 Population of Kuwait in Census Years 246

16 Professional and Technical Labour Force by Nationality 1957, 1965, 1970 and 1975 252

17 Government Civil Servants by Educational Attainment, February 1976 256

18 Government Civil Servants by Ranges, February 1976 257

19 Operating Establishments by Section of Economic Activity, Number of Labourers and Average Monthly Wages, 1974 266

20 Government Civil Servants by Occupational Division and Average Monthly Wages, February 1976 268

21 Kuwaitis 10 Years and Over by Educational Status, 1957 and 1975 292

22 Percentage Distribution of the Labour Force, by Occupational Division, 1957 and 1975 . . . 303

23 Estimates of Labour Force Demand, by Kind of Economic Activity, 1980-81. 310

24 Distribution of Total Demand by Major Occupational Groups, 1980-81 312

25 Distribution of Kuwaiti Income Levels by Proportion of Income Captured, Persons, Households, 1972/1973 273

26 Distribution of Kuwaiti Income Levels by Proportion of Income Captured, Persons, Households, 1972/1973 275

LIST OF CHARTS

1 Population and the Labour Force, 1976/77-1980/81 308

2 The Goals of Training in Strategic Professions During Plan Period; 1976-1980 314

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

Karl Marx introduced the fundamental analytic distinction of social dialectic by distinguishing between the substructure and superstructure of society. By identifying the organization of social labour as the very substructure of society, Marx formulated a method for analyzing the framework and historical dynamic of society. This framework and dynamic is the mode of production, composed of two analytically distinct and dialectically related factors: relations of production and forces of production. Explaining the concept of relations of production, Marx noted:[1]

> In production, men not only act on nature but also on one another. They produce only by co-operating in a certain way and mutually exchanging their activities. In order to produce, they enter into definite connections and relations with one another and only within these social connections and relations does their action on nature, does production, take place.

---

[1] Karl Marx, "Wage Labour and Capital," in Robert C. Tucker, ed., The Marx-Engels Reader (New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1972), p.177.

The forces of production, on the other hand, are the factors of production--human resources, natural resources and man-made resources--which together determine the quantity and composition of material production (the level of development). In considering the relationship between the relations of production and the forces of production, Marx stated:[2]

> These social relations into which the producers enter with one another, the conditions under which they exchange their activities and participate in the whole act of production, will naturally vary according to the character of the means of production . . . . Thus the social relations within which individuals produce, the social relations of production, change, are transformed, with the change and development of the material means of production, the productive forces.

Marx's analysis of the dynamic of history, however, led him to the conclusion that at a certain level of the development of productive forces societies break up into antagonistic social classes based upon the expropriation and alienation of labour and that these antagonistic relations of production inhibit the development of productive forces. The growth of contradictions between the relations of production and the forces of production under a developing mode of production, manifested in the dialectic of social classes, facilitates the crystallization of class consciousness within an aggregate of individuals occupying a common objective position vis-a-vis the means of production--a "class in itself" becomes a "class for itself"--and the struggle for ascendancy over the social structure that ensues. Marx applied this framework to a detailed analysis of the dynamic of capitalism as a mode of production.

---

[2] *Ibid.*

Marx's analysis of the dynamic of capitalism demonstrated how alienation progressed from a specific to a universal attribute of the relations of production under the competitive struggle for capital accumulation.[3] Lenin expanded Marx's analysis to demonstrate how the dynamic of capital expansion brought the whole world into the framework of capitalist relations of production.[4] Bukharin, Luxembourg, and others refined and extended the theoretical relationship of imperialism and capital expansion.[5] By and large, however, the classical Marxian theorists of imperialism were concerned with imperialism in terms of stages of capitalist development in the central capitalist nations and consideration of the imperialized countries was tangential to this.[6] Working from this tradition, however, dependency theory has developed in terms of an examination of the historical role of imperialism in "the development of underdevelopment." Paul Baran developed the framework for this approach in his pioneering work, The Political Economy of Growth, arguing from the historical perspective that underdevelopment is the result of the subordination by capitalists of pre-capitalist structures.[7]

---

[3] I. Meszaros, Marx's Theory of Alienation (London: The Merlin Press, 1970), pp.130-136.

[4] V. I. Lenin, Imperialism: The Highest Stage of Capitalism (Moscow: Foreign Language Publishing House, n.d.).

---

[5] N. Bukharin, Imperialism and World Economy (London: The Merlin Press, 1972); R. Luxemburg, The Accumulation of Capital (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1951). For a comprehensive overview of theories of imperialism--classical, Keynesian and Marxist--see Michael Barratt Brown, The Economics of Imperialism (Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1974).

[6] For a very lucid comparison of dependency theorists with classical Marxist approaches to the issues of development and underdevelopment, see Aidan Foster-Carter, "Neo-Marxist Approaches to Development and Underdevelopment," in Emanuel de Kadt and Gavin Williams, Sociology and Development (London: Tavistock Publications, 1974).

[7] (New York: Monthly Review Press, 1957). Andre Gunder Frank, Capitalism and Underdevelopment in Latin America: Historical Studies of Chile and Brazil (New York: Monthly Review Press, 1967), took up Baran's framework in his analyses, explicitly acknowledging his debt to Baran.

The Development of Underdevelopment: Dependency

Utilizing Marx's dialectic of relations of production and forces of production, dependency theory has emerged as a critique of neo-classical development theories.[8] It has identified the essential unity of the development-underdevelopment dichotomy of nations. Both are part of the same historical process of capital accumulation and expansion, and are integrally related in terms of production, distribution, exchange and consumption.[9]

As a historical process, the development of underdevelopment is integrally related to the deepening of the capitalist mode of production in the central capitalist nations through its expansion to pre-capitalist nations as peripheral formations for capitalist exploitation.[10] Samir Amin has identified the dynamic of the deepening-expansion process as the means by which capitalism checks the tendency of the rate of profit to fall: 1) increasing the rate of surplus value; 2) spreading the capitalist mode of production to new regions where the rate of surplus value is higher; and 3) developing various forms of waste.[11] The era that hindsight now calls the stage of imperialism reflected the dominance of the second mechanism when a main thrust of capitalist development (deepening-expansion of the capitalist mode of production) was "toward the territorial division of the world among the leading capitalist countries."[12] According to Nicos Poulantzas, this era marked the transition from dominance of the periphery by means of simple commodity export to dominance by means of the export of capitals, corresponding to the transition of capitalism in the center from competitive to monopoly capital.[13] The expansion of this era, achieved through force of varying degrees, induced the articulation of the peripheral pre-capitalist societies with the demands of the central capitalist nations and their integration into the evolving world division of labour.

---

[8] Not all theories of dependency are Marxist in orientation, although they do all originate essentially from an imperialist perspective. For an overview of the historical development of dependency theories, see Philip J. O'Brien, "A Critique of Latin American Theories of Dependency," and David Booth, "Andre Gunder Frank: An Introduction and Appreciation," in Ivar Oxaal, Tony Barnett, and David Booth, Beyond the Sociology of Development: Economy and Society in Latin America and Africa (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1975).

[9] Samir Amin, Accumulation on a World Scale: A Critique of the Theory of Underdevelopment, Vols. 1 and 2 (New York: Monthly Review Press, 1974).

---

[10] Nicos Poulantzas, "Internationalisation of Capitalist Relations and the Nation-State," Economy and Society, Vol. 3 No. 2 (May 1974), pp.147-149. In this article, Poulantzas attempts to identify several phases in the process of imperialism on the basis of the transformations of capitalism in the center. For another treatment of imperialism in terms of historical periods, see Harry Magdoff, "Imperialism: A Historical Survey," Monthly Review, Vol. 24, No. 1 (May 1972).

[11] Samir Amin, Unequal Development: An Essay on the Social Formations of Peripheral Capitalism (New York: Monthly Review Press, 1976), pp.287-292.

[12] Fernando Henrique Cardoso, "Dependency and Development in Latin America," New Left Review, No. 74 (July-August 1972), p.85.

Ignoring this historical role of imperialism, the neo-classical view of economic development views pre-capitalist societies as essentially static entities that are recently embarking upon the road to economic development. According to this essentially unilineal view, economic development is initiated when production in some sector or industry becomes oriented to larger markets--regional, national or international. Orientation to the larger market stimulates capital investment, centralization of production and specialization of function to increase per capita productivity. Centralization and specialization increase the demand for supportive goods and services as production and consumption

---

[13] Poulantzas, "Internationalisation of Capitalist Relations and the Nation-State," pp.146-148.

become differentiated. While the application of capital displaces non-specialized labour, the market for new goods and services generates a demand for specialized labour. This new market stimulates capital investment and specialization. And so, through a series of stages of growth generally marked by the level of capital investment, the cycle becomes self-generating, gradually enveloping larger and larger segments of the society into integrated, interdependent markets on a regional, national and international scale. Thus, the traditional, localized exchange activities and relationships of underdeveloped societies are gradually displaced by differentiated, centralized activities. This is accompanied by structural shifts in the distribution of labour as labour markets expand and diversify in conjunction with markets for goods and services. It is through the labour market that the wealth generated by increased output is distributed to the population in the form of income. Increasing incomes associated with higher levels of productivity generate demand for consumer goods and services, thus contributing to the growth of markets and the rising standard of living of the population.

This broad summary of the neo-classical view of the process of economic development and growth points up the important factors that have been stressed in the literature: capital investment, specialization of labour, and the expansion and diversification of markets. Capital investment, either at the level of the individual entrepreneur or at the level of the national economy, is generated from the level of surplus (or the profit margin for the individual entrepreneur). The level of surplus, as a measure of wealth in an economy, is related to the level of demand for goods and services and also to the amount available for further capital investment. The continuing process of development, then, is directly related to the rate of growth of surplus because of the capital investment it permits and the new markets it generates. The level of complexity and the rate of increasing complexity of the division of labour are thus directly dependent upon the rate of growth of surplus; and the distribution of wealth in the form of income is directly related to the rate of labour specialization and hence the rate of growth.

However, dependency theorists such as Frank argue that creation of a primary commodity export economy dependent upon the importation of foreign capital equipment created and perpetuates a situation of underdevelopment. In effect, such policies maintain the imperialist relationship of Third World nations as sources for cheap raw materials and labour, and markets for the capital equipment and consumer goods of industrialized nations, thus restricting the development of internal markets and industries. Under this circumstance, the capital investment and specialization of labour that occur are limited and are related to and dependent upon the mode of production of other (metropole) nations, while the capital accumulated is transferred out of the nation.

In terms of the neo-classical view, then, economic development is based upon capital as a prime factor of production. It is the rate of capital accumulation that affects the level of capital investment and hence the rate of specialization of labour. The demands for supportive and consumer goods and services generated by what centralization of production and specialization of labour that have occurred cannot be satisfied internally. These demands then must be satisfied by external markets, in effect creating a further drain on capital resources. Dependency theorists like Frank argue that this creates a vicious circle with the goal of achieving a self-sustaining rate of growth ever elusive.

The result of integration into the world market and the application of foreign capital is the creation of the so-called dual economy--a small enclave of a high productivity economic sector based upon imported technologies and oriented to external markets (in terms of both production and consumption), in the midst of a low productivity sector oriented to subsistence. The social structural counterpart of the dual economy is the co-existence of an urban-based modern highly specialized occupational structure oriented to modern modes of production and consumption and a rural-based unspecialized structure oriented to subsistence.

The linkage between the two sectors is the rate of transfer of capital and labour from one sector to the other. In effect, the dependency relationship that exists between the metropole and satellite nations is duplicated internally in the relationship between the dominant modern sector and the subordinate traditional sector (Frank's metropole-satellite chain of exploitation).[14] Value expropriated from the subordinate (rural) sectors is concentrated in the dominant (urban) sectors. Rather than being re-invested internally, however, and hence providing urban jobs for labour displaced in the subordinate sector, the capital is expropriated to the metropole. The result is the more or less rapid transfer of capital and the dislocation of labour.

---

[14] Andre Gunder Frank, "The Development of Underdevelopment," in James D. Cockcroft, Andre Gunder Frank and Dale L. Johnson, Dependence and Underdevelopment: Latin America's Political Economy (Garden City: Anchor Books, 1972), pp.3-17.

Working from the theoretical perspective of imperialism, dependency theorists have identified the contradictions between the forces of production and the relations of production inherent in the capitalist mode of production that are manifested internationally in the relations between developed and "developing" nations. Andre Gunder Frank identified three contradictions in the development of capitalism as a world system that form the context of underdevelopment: 1) the contradiction of expropriation/appropriation of economic surplus; 2) the contradiction of metropolis-satellite polarization; and 3) the contradiction of continuity in change--referring to the maintenance of the essential structure of capitalism through the process of change in its configuration.[15] Development and underdevelopment, imperialism and dependency, in other words, cannot be viewed in isolation. In the words of T. Dos Santos:[16]

---

[15] Frank, Capitalism and Underdevelopment in Latin America, pp.6-14.

[16] T. Dos Santos, "The Crisis of Dependency Theory and the Problem of Dependence in Latin America," in H. Bernstein, ed., Underdevelopment and Development (Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1973), p.73.

> To understand dependence as a conditioning context of certain kinds of internal structure is to understand development as a worldwide historical phenomenon, as a consequence of the formation, expansion and consolidation of the capitalist system. This approach implies the need to integrate into one single historical account the capitalist expansion of the developed countries and the consequences of that expansion in the countries which are today adversely affected by it. These consequences are not 'effects' of capitalist development in a simplistic sense, but rather they are integral and determinant parts thereof.

The Social Structure of Dependency:

The Dependency Syndrome

The corollary processes of the transfer of capital out of the nation and the dislocation (proletarianization) of labour are the progressive marginalization of the masses and the integration of the elite into a supra-national economic, political and/or social order. These processes have been of more recent focal concern to dependency theorists who have come to recognize that the essentially external explanation of dependency in terms of world capitalism is no longer adequate to explain the dynamics of dependency. According to Fernando Cardoso:[17]

---

[17] Cardoso, "Dependency and Development in Latin America," p.93.

> . . . as the process of internationalization of dependent nations progresses, it becomes difficult to perceive the political process in terms of a struggle between the Nation and the anti-Nation, the latter conceived as the Foreign Power of Imperialism. The anti-Nation will be inside the 'Nation'--so to speak, among the local people in different social strata. Furthermore, to perceive that, in these terms, the Nation is an occupied one, is not an easy process: there are very few 'others' in cultural and national terms physically representing the presence of 'the enemy'.

Dependency exists, in other words, no longer primarily in terms of external exploitation, but in the very structure of social life within the society. This structure is characterized by fragmentation--i.e., by the progressive disarticulation of the forces of production in terms of productive levels, and by the progressive disarticulation of the relations of production across various sectors of economic activity at different productive levels.[18] This segmentation within the society is a result of the articulation of selected socio-economic sectors with central capitalist economies and subordination of other sectors to the demands of accumulation in the dominant sector (Frank's metropolis-satellite chain of exploitation in social space as well as spatial space).

---

[18] Anibal Quijano Obregon, "The Marginal Pole of the Economy and the Marginalized Labour Force," Economy and Society, Vol. 3, No. 4 (November 1974), pp.393-428.

Whereas capital expansion in central capitalist nations presupposed the elimination of all other modes of production through the progressive capitalization of all the forces of production due to the deepening of the internal market, in peripheral nations capital expansion appears to presuppose the subordination (as opposed to elimination) of other modes of production.[19] If this is the case, then what appears to be structural disarticulation may actually be a mode of articulation among forces that sustains primitive accumulation while obviating expanded reproduction. This is essentially Amin's point in Accumulation on a World Scale, where he analyzes the complex "mechanisms of primitive accumulation for the benefit of metropolitan capital."[20] Within this context, Frank's argument that the penetration of capitalism eliminates pre-capitalist elements by their integration into a single capitalist system gains perspective.[21]

---

[19] Obregon, "The Marginal Pole of the Economy and the Marginalized Labour Force," makes this point in terms of the concept marginalization.

[20] p.382.

[21] See, for example, Frank's argument on "The Myth of Feudalism in Brazilian Agriculture," in Capitalism and Underdevelopment, pp.221-277, and his argument in "The Development of Underdevelopment," in Dependence and Underdevelopment, pp.3-17.

We may speak of non-capitalized or undercapitalized forces of production, but not pre-capitalist modes, and in particular not pre-capitalist relations of production. C. Meillassoux makes a similar point when he notes that the apparent "survival" of the rural community in developing nations is really "an organic component of capitalist production." He explains that "the agricultural self-sustaining communities, . . . fulfill functions that capitalism prefers not to assume in the underdeveloped countries: the functions of social security. The cheap cost of labour in these countries comes from the super-exploitation, not only of the labour from the wage-earner himself but also of the labour of his kin-group." Thus, he concludes, "because of this process of absorption within the capitalist economy, the agricultural communities, maintained as reserves of cheap labour, are being both undermined and perpetuated at the same time, undergoing a prolongated crisis and not a smooth transition to capitalism."[22] The result of this parasitic relationship of socio-economic sectors at different levels of productivity is growth without development, expansion without deepening.

---

[22] C. Meillassoux, "From Reproduction to Production," Economy and Society, Vol. 1, No. 1 (1972), pp.102-103.

The dynamic of capitalist expansion thus appears different in peripheral societies from its dynamism in central capitalist societies, although the theoretical framework for specifying this difference has not yet been adequately developed. This problem will be discussed again in the following section. The point to be made here is that the social structures of dependent societies are characterized by a syndrome of segmentation. The features of this syndrome are: 1) the progressive subordination of all sectors of the socio-economic infrastructure to the demands of a limited primary commodity export economy; 2) dependence of the productive sector upon the importation of the products of Western technologies; 3) dependence of the internal market on the importation of essential consumer goods; 4) proletarianization of labour; 5) low levels of employment in the productive economic sector (marginalization of labour); 6) rapid growth of the tertiary sector; 7) increasing concentration of wealth and power.

Dependence and Social Class

Leys has pointed out the limitations of dependency theory. In particular, he notes its "economistic character" and the rather abstract role the concept social class plays.[23] Working from the theoretical perspective of imperialism, dependency theorists have focussed on the role of capital as a primary contradiction negating the development thesis. However, while dependency theory has demonstrated effectively that the external relations of domination inhibit the development of the forces of production within dependent societies, it has not demonstrated why these relations are continually reproduced in the structures of dependent societies; nor, indeed, why the structures of dependency have actually deepened in most Third World nations in spite of the national liberation movements which swept across Latin America, Asia and Africa, freeing these nations from overt colonial domination. O'Brien in this regard points out the circular argument of dependency theory: "dependent countries are those which lack the capacity for autonomous growth and they lack this because their structures are dependent ones."[24]

---

[23] Colin Leys, Underdevelopment in Kenya: The Political Economy of Neo-Colonialism, 1964 - 1971 (London: Heinemann, 1975), p.20.

[24] O'Brien, "A Critique of Latin American Theories of Dependency," p.24.

Given the removal of the overt structures of imperialist domination, Roxborough[25] has posed the problem directly in asking why the value extracted from the subordinate internal sector flows abroad rather than initiating a process of internal capital accumulation. This raises directly a fundamental question posed by Amin as to whether autonomous capitalist development is possible in Third World countries (as originally envisaged by Marx, and later by Lenin in his theory of imperialism).[26] Indeed, the concentration on capital flows does suggest this possibility, but only if capital itself is narrowly interpreted in an "economistic" way.

In its fundamental meaning, capital, as conceived by Marx, embodies an objective relation between constituted labour and living labour. This relation is manifest in the objective social opposition between the expropriators of constituted labour (i.e., capital) and the owners of living labour (that is, labour power). Marx demonstrated that in the capitalist mode of production there is a necessary link between the rate of surplus value and the level of development of productive forces. In other words, the level of development of the capitalist mode is dependent upon the rate of exploitation of labour. This is the dialectic of social class in the capitalist mode of production. It is this objective opposition of social classes that constitutes the dynamics of advanced capitalist society.

---

[25] Ian Roxborough, "Dependency Theory in the Sociology of Development: Some Theoretical Problems," The West African Journal of Sociology and Political Science, Vol. 1, No. 2 (January 1976), 116-133, p.120.

[26] Samir Amin, "Self-Reliance and the New International Economic Order," Monthly Review, Vol. 29 (July-August 1977), 1-21, p.2.

What has to be demonstrated in dependency theory is that the flow of capital out of the nation and other features of the social structure of dependency are the result of objective class relations within a dependent society. One of the problems posed in forwarding the class analysis of so-called dependent societies is their heterogeneous character. The question arises as to whether they constitute a homogeneous category in terms of the fundamental concept of mode of production. While the linkage fostered by imperialism between the capitalist mode of production and a pre-capitalist mode of production has been the historical process for the creation of dependency, how this actually changed the nature of the pre-capitalist mode of production varies from society to society depending upon:

1) the level of development of the capitalist mode of production at the time of imperialist penetration into the pre-capitalist society; and correlatively,
2) the point of integration into the evolving world division of labour;
3) the nature of the pre-capitalist social structure at the time of imperialist penetration;
4) the way and extent this structure was modified by imperialism;
5) the subsequent changes in the world capitalist system and their effect upon the particular history of each society since imperialist penetration.

One result of the wide range of variability in the structures of dependent societies is the inability to generalize about objective class dynamics within them. The theory remains fundamentally rooted at the level of dynamics of the international system rather than at the level of social class dynamics. While it is empirically demonstrable that capital accumulated at the national level is expropriated out of the nation, and that this is explainable in terms of an international division of labour, unequal development of productive forces, and the consequent assymetrical exchange relations thus fostered,[27] aside from instances of overt coercion by international powers it is not theoretically deducible why Third World nations have continued to participate in this disadvantageous system--that is, why the relations of dependency continue to be reproduced in these societies in spite of the widening rift between developed and underdeveloped nations on most of the standard measures of development.[28]

A theory of the reproduction of the relations of dependency requires an analysis of the dynamics of social class structure of the society. If we are to understand dependency as something more than neo-imperialist coercion, we must begin to analyze the objective opposition between social classes that constitutes its dynamic. Here the analysis immediately founders on the fundamental concept of mode of production. Third World nations exhibit such a variable array of capitalist and pre-capitalist or non-capitalist elements that application of Marx's categories of class analysis, developed in terms of the pure capitalist mode of production, results in considerable modification (evidenced by the veritable proliferation of class nomenclature) of his analytical model.[29]

---

[27] Amin, Unequal Development: An Essay on the Social Formations of Peripheral Capitalism.

[28] These measures are discussed in Nancy Baster, ed., Measuring Development: The Role and Adequacy of Development Indicators (London: Frank Cass, 1972).

As indicated earlier, the dominant conceptualization of the variable mix in Third World nations of capitalist and non-capitalist elements is that capitalism in dependent societies operates by a different dynamic than capitalism in advanced capitalist nations, and this difference is signified by the neologism "peripheral" capitalism. Here the conception (explicit or implicit) is that we are dealing with the capitalist mode of production but that it operates by a different dynamic than central capitalism. This difference is described by the external orientation of peripheral capitalism (as opposed to the internal orientation of central capitalism) and by the dependent relationship that exists between peripheral and central capitalist economies (as opposed to the interdependent relations between advanced capitalist economies).[30] Presumably, however, the objective class relations operate differently in each society depending upon the particular mode of articulation of capitalist and pre-capitalist elements. We are not, then, dealing with one dependent or peripheral capitalist mode of production, but with an array of modes whose common characteristic is the limitation on autonomous capitalist development imposed in one way or another by a relationship with central capitalism.

---

[29] In reviewing this proliferation of neologisms, Roxborough points up the structural (and indeed, theoretical) implications of concepts that infer hierarchical class continuums rather than dialectical dichotomies (pp.124-126).

[30] Amin, "Self-Reliance and the New International Order."

Again, however, we arrive at the persistent dilemma of dependency theorists as to whether autonomous capitalist development is possible if the domination of central capitalist powers is overcome--that is, if the capital accumulated internally is reinvested rather than expropriated out of the nation.[31] While reference to the international division of labour, unequal development of productive forces and assymetrical exchange address the probabilities of autonomous capitalist development, nevertheless they do not rule out the possibility. This question can ultimately be answered only by reference to the objective dynamics of social classes. This must be the point of reference of mode of production and not vice-versa.

---

[31] This contention has not only been advanced by the school of structural economists, who also argued dependency, but from a non-Marxist perspective. See for example, ECLA, Development Problems in Latin America (Austin: University of Texas Press, 1969); recent studies from the left have supported this contention: Bill Warren "Imperialism and Capitalist Industrialization," New Left Review, No. 74 (July-August 1972), for example, has brought together a wealth of data to convincingly argue that industrialization has begun to "take-off" in many Third World nations. See, also, Bob Sutcliffe, "Imperialism and Industrialization in the Third World," in Roger Owen and Bob Sutcliffe, eds., Studies in the Theory of Imperialism (London: Longman, 1972). Marxist oriented dependency theorists, on the other hand, have argued that these indicators of industrialization are in fact the result of a new form of dependency initiated by the penetration of multinational corporations who dominate production rather than trade for the internal as well as international market. See, for example, F. Cardoso, "Dependency and Development in Latin America," and N. Poulantzas, "Internationalisation of Capitalist Relations and the Nation-State."

Dependency in Perspective

Dependency theory, it must be recalled, emerged in terms of an analysis of the relations between nations, not social classes. It takes its point of departure from the fact that the relations of production on a world scale are constituted in a particular political structure, and that the historical development of political structures in Third World nations is explained by the imperialism/dependency dialectic. It is not social classes that are the historical actors but capitalist nations. While this perspective has identified the historical process of the development of underdevelopment, nevertheless it remains one level of analysis above the question of the reproduction of dependency. To bridge this level of analysis, we must take the central clue offered by dependency theory--that there is a necessary (objective) link between an expropriating class (peripheral capitalists) in the dependent nation and central capitalism--and subject it to intensive empirical investigation from the level of analysis of social classes to define its nature and dynamics (internal as well as external).

Such an analysis must begin with the organization of social labour in a society to empirically determine the historical structuring of alienation and expropriation, and the nature of the dialectic between substructure and superstructure, that constitutes the mode of production. Modes of production cannot be theoretically deduced but must be empirically determined from the concrete material history of a society. Only in this way can we begin to determine whether dependency constitutes a distinct mode of production--i.e., whether these societies are subject to the same laws of motion--or whether they constitute an array of different modes collectively subordinated to the dynamic of central capitalism.

This Study

This perspective defines the framework of the present study of Kuwait. Beginning with the organization of social labour in Kuwait prior to its integration into the world division of labour, the study seeks to delineate the social structure of that period. This investigation focusses on the question of whether or not Kuwait in this period was a class structured society--i.e., a society based upon antagonistic relations of production--and if so, what was the dynamic of class relations in early Kuwait. This analysis, then, constitutes the delineation of early Kuwait's mode of production.

In 1899, Kuwait became a British protectorate, and did not receive formal independence until 1961. The analysis of the establishment of Kuwait as a protectorate will focus upon the issue of how this affected the social structure of Kuwait. It is in this respect, then, that an understanding of Kuwait's mode of production prior to the period of British penetration is important.

This analysis will also address the issue of whether or not the establishment of Kuwait as a British protectorate initiated within Kuwait the historical process of the development of underdevelopment. In 1936, Kuwait signed an oil concession covering the whole of Kuwait with a British-American consortium. While clearly this was the initiation of Kuwait's contemporary integration into the world division of labour as a major oil exporter, nevertheless this role did not materialize until the early fifties. What were the structural dynamics within Kuwait prior to its emergence as a major oil producer. There is an apparent hard and fast break between the social structure of pre-oil Kuwait and that of affluent Kuwait. With the emergence of oil as the principal source of wealth, the forces of production within Kuwait underwent a sudden and radical transformation. Yet underpinning this apparent discontinuity marking Kuwait's rapid transition from rags to riches is considerable continuity in the relations of production. It is to understand both the aspects of change and continuity that an examination of the structural dynamics of the period from 1899 to the early fifties is crucial.

All of the above, of course, is historical research to provide the basis for understanding the dialectic between the forces of production and the relations of production within contemporary Kuwait. Unlike most Third World nations (and unlike all of the Third World nations studied within the framework of dependency theory), contemporary Kuwait is a capital surplus nation. If capital shortage per se is not the origin of either underdevelopment or dependency, as dependency theorists maintain, then can Kuwait be characterized as an underdeveloped and dependent nation? It bears the historical characteristics of the process identified by dependency theorists: a pre-capitalist society penetrated by a Western capitalist nation in the historic era of imperialism and integrated into the contemporary world division of labour as a primary commodity export economy. Does Kuwait also reflect the structural characteristics of dependency, the dependency syndrome?

All of these questions ultimately bear upon the central theoretical dilemma of dependency theory--that is, is autonomous capitalist development possible in a dependent nation. While this issue may not be resolved by a case study of Kuwait, the related and logically prior question (from the perspective of social class analysis) will be a central issue of this study--that is, is there a necessary (objective) link between an expropriating class in the dependent nation and central capitalism, and does this link define the structural dynamics of dependency. It is hoped that an answer to this question in the case of Kuwait will contribute to the theoretical development of dependency theory.

Dependency theory, then, provides the framework of this analysis. As used in this study, dependency refers to the perpetuation of underdevelopment. It is a central hypothesis of dependency theory that it is the relations of production of capitalism as a world system that inhibit the possibility of autonomous capitalist development in underdeveloped societies integrated into the world capitalist division of labour. Dependency, then, refers to a specification of the relations of production. Underdevelopment, on the other hand, refers to the forces of production specified relatively on two dimensions: historically, i.e., a society was at a higher level of development of productive forces prior to capitalist penetration; comparatively, i.e., a society sustains functioning at a level of primitive accumulation subsequent to capitalist penetration, in contrast to expanded capital accumulation in classical capitalist development. Primitive accumulation is the process of divorcing the producers from the means of production--the process of the proletarianization of labour --resulting from the expropriation and concentration of the means of production. Capital accumulation is the process of the expansion and centralization of capitalist production resulting from the expropriation and concentration of already formed capitals. In primitive accumulation, the volume of social capital increases relative to the rate at which the means of production are brought into capitalist production; it is directly associated, then, with the rate at which labour is proletarianized. This is the process of the expansion of capitalism referred to earlier. In capital accumulation, the magnitude of social capital increases relative to the rate at which the volume of constant capital expands; it is associated with the rate at which labour is marginalized by the increase in constant capital at the expense of variable capital. This is the process of the deepening of capitalism referred to earlier.

A method used by Marx of turning the theory upside down (in this case inside out) is used here vis-a-vis dependency theory. Rather than viewing the problem from the outside in--

from the perspective of nations as historical actors--the analysis begins from the inside out--from the perspective of the historical organization of social labour, the class dialectics generated from this organization, the changes wrought in this organization by imperailist penetration, and integration into the world division of labour.

The above discussion provides the general framework for the organization of this study. Part I will encompass the pre-affluent era, examining the structure of Kuwaiti society prior to the establishment of the British protectorate (1899), and the period subsequent to it until the emergence of Kuwait as a major oil exporter (circa 1952). Part II will encompass the affluent era to the present, examining both the themes of change and continuity in Kuwaiti society and will examine the expansion and deepening of capitalist relations of production within Kuwaiti society and the contradictions generated. The final chapter will summarize the findings of this study, consider Kuwait's prospects in the light of these findings, and consider the implications of these findings vis-a-vis dependency theory.

PART I:

PRE-OIL KUWAIT

CHAPTER II:

THE ORIGINS AND STRUCTURAL DEVELOPMENT OF KUWAIT

Kuwait is a tiny shaikhdom situated on the western shore of the Arabian Gulf. Isolated on three sides by vast expanses of desert and on the fourth by the Arabian Gulf, Kuwait society in the pre-oil era was shaped by the counterpoint of the two dominant themes of its environment--the desert and the sea. The geography of the Middle East outlines broadly the interplay of social forces that shaped early Kuwait. The juxtaposition of arid desert, sea coasts, and fertile river valleys delineates three modes of production: nomadic, maritime and agricultural. While the influence of agriculture is indirect in Kuwait, the desert and the sea come together there to provide both the stage and plot of early Kuwaiti society. How each influenced its structure, and how each was modified by the other in a continuous interplay of essentially antagonistic patterns is the subject of this chapter.

The Bedouin Basis of Social Structure

The influence of the desert on early Kuwait society relates intimately to the great bedouin tribes of the Arabian desert. To these tribes Kuwait traces the origins of its founding fathers, and from the tribes Kuwait inherited and modified the structural foundations of the society.

Communal in character, the pure nomadic life of the Arabian tribes as exhibited in the heart of the desert[1] was organized around pastoral wanderings as the basic means of subsistence within the harsh desert environment. There existed within Arabia's arid ecological zones two essentially antagonist modes of production--sheep herding and camel herding.[2] The articulation of the two modes took the political form of tribal organization. More mobile (in terms of distance, speed and range in the continuous search and competition for pasture land and water) than sheep herders, camel herders achieved hegemony in the desert and assumed aristocratic origins as a legitimation (known as sharif bedouin tribes).[3] They maintained their exclusiveness through rules of marital exchange that precluded inter-marriage with tribes of non-sharif origins. The less mobile sheep herders evolved as a class of producers organized along client tribal lines in a serf-like position tending the flocks owned by the sharif tribes, or tending the flocks of wealthy town-dwellers on the periphery of the desert, or as owners of their own flocks and organized as independent tribes, but generally allied to one of the powerful bedouin tribes.[4]

---

[1] Much of what we know about the nomadic Arab tribes of the area comes from the intrepid British travellers of the 19th and early 20th centuries who were the by-products (if not the agents) of British imperialism. These narratives generally reflect either the contempt for "uncivilized" peoples that justified British imperialism or the "noble savage" syndrome of its apologists. Nevertheless, these works provide invaluable empirical data on the tribes, data that no doubt contributed to the implementation of British imperial policy in the area. Classics in this literature include: J. L. Burckhardt, Notes on the Bedouins and Wahabys (London: Colburn and Bentley, 1831); J. R. Wellsted, Travels in Arabia, 2 vols. (London: John Murray, 1838); William Gifford Palgrave, Narrative of a Year's Journey Through Central and Eastern Arabia (1862-63), 2 vols. (London: Macmillan and Co., 1865); C. M. Doughty, Travels in Arabia Deserta (London: Jonathan Cape Ltd., 1888); W. Robertson-Smith, Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia (London: A. & C. Black, 1885).

---

[2] See H.R.P. Dickson, The Arab of the Desert (London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd., 1949), pp.108-117 for an account of the distinctions between sheep herders and camel herders; also, his Appendix I, pp.563-576, which outlines the main tribal divisions within some of Central Arabia's major tribes. Dickson, the son of British civil servants serving in the Middle East, was born in the Arab world and spent his career as a British civil servant in the Arab world, serving as Political Agent in Kuwait from 1929 to 1936 and again in 1941.

[3] The term bedouin is used variously in Western literature to mean either the nomads of the Arabian desert in general or the sharif tribes in particular. The term derives from the Arabic word badiyah, meaning desert (in the genitive case, badu, meaning a man of the desert). It is used here in the general case.

This articulation took the normative form of descent lineages. Segmented lineage systems served as the basis of social organization, with lineages organized in terms of ashira (descendants from a common ancester, real or mythical), and subdivided in terms of fakhths (segmented lineages) and families. These segments were related by the degree of kinship between them.[5] The ashira defined the broadest level of effective kinship, and the degree of kinship delimited the sphere of cooperative social labour--the way people were joined together in group endeavors.[6] Outside these limits the expectation of hostility was the norm, while within them the closeness of the kinship tie moderated the incessant competition between groups over the use of pasture lands and wells, and the possession of camels and horses--the means of subsistence of nomadic life.[7]

---

[4] See, Dickson, pp.111-113.

[5] The system of classification of kin relations varies among the tribes as well as among Arab genealogists, sometimes extending to 12 or more grades. The terms used here are among the most general structural units. In addition, there are terms that express the kin relationship between structural units. It should be pointed out here that the term tribe as used in English may refer to any grouping depending upon the effective alliances at the time of observation. The Arabic term ashira has a similar variability in usage. While the literature in Arabic is vast, for a discussion of tribal classification in English, see Dickson, pp.113-116, and pp.563-576; also, S. B. Miles, The Countries and Tribes of The Persian Gulf (London: Frank Cass & Co., 1919) for the genealogies of particular tribes in Oman and a sense of the impact of politics on kinship alliances; also, J. G. Lorimer's monumental work, synthesizing all available British records of the area, Gazeteer of the Persian Gulf, Oman and Central Arabia, (Shannon: Irish University Press, 1970), first issued by the Government of India in two volumes, 1908 and 1915 respectively, for official use, and only made available to the public in the early fifties.

The ashira, then, defined a kin relation through time, while the relation between fakhths and families was continuously shifting over time in a kaleidescopic fashion. In the constantly shifting alliances, segmentation and reorganization of tribal segments that constituted the political history of the desert, kinship ideology served as both the legitimation of cohesion and cleavage in the continuous competition for scarce resources. In the long view, tribal genealogies served as the dogma of the powerful tribes and the ideology of ascendant tribes. Knowledge of the complex genealogies was the epistemology of the Arabian desert.

---

[6] For an intensive study of the socio-economic-political nature of the segmented lineage system, see Donald Powell Cole, Nomads of the Nomads: The Al Murrah Bedouin of the Empty Quarter (Chicago: Aldine Publishing Co., 1975).

[7] In this regard, Palgrave, Vol. 1, p.34, contemptuously observed that "the Bedouin does not fight for his home, he has none; nor for his country, that is anywhere; nor for his honour, he never heard of it; nor for his religion, he owns and cares for none. His only object in war is the temporary occupation of some bit of miserable pasture-land. . . ."

Corresponding to the kinship form of social organization was a patriarchal form of political organization, with allegiances organized in a hierarchical order around the male elders of the family, the fakhth and ashira. Each fakhth had a shaikh, while the ashira had a paramount shaikh (shaikh mashaykh--shaikh of the shaikhs).[8] While the position of shaikh was hereditary to a family, the order of succession was arbitrary, depending essentially upon tribal consensus of the most able of the potential successors, and the issue of succession itself was often a catalyst to tribal segmentation. In addition, the shaikh had no mystified or special powers over tribal affairs. He was merely an equal among equals, and his ability to lead depended upon his ability to maintain the confidence of tribal elders, whom he was obliged to consult in all matters. This essentially egalitarian structure of political organization is reflected in a poem of a tribal elder:[9]

---

[8] George N. Curzon, Persia and the Persian Question (New York: Barnes & Noble, 1966), Vol. 2, p.271, observed that "obedience and loyalty are observed within these limits, but not outside them. Taxation is only successfully exacted by a Government that employs this machinery."

We are friends of his highness the shaikh,
But we shall reject him if we see evil
intentions.

If you accept advice, we will advise you.
And if you do not accept advise,
We will banish you to hell.

As a mode of production, camel pastoralism was a self-sufficient, self-perpetuating form of economic appropriation that required geographic mobility and group elasticity and autonomy. These were reflected in the elastic kinship structure and decentralized authority structures. The camel alone could provide all the basic means of appropriation from the arid environment and was the fundamental form of wealth in the nomadic culture. From the camel came all the means of survival and artifacts of private ownership--shelter, clothing and food. Sheep, goats and horses, where they were incorporated, were supplementary to the camel, not substitutive among sharif tribes.

Corresponding to the segmented lineage system, stocks were privately owned, with families representing corporate units of ownership. In contrast, wells, pasture and tribal range were tribally possessed. Inter-tribal raiding was a chief means of expropriation of the camel and one of the sole means of surplus appropriation within the desert, although it did not raise the meagre level of surplus available. According to the eminent historian, Philip Hitti, the raid "otherwise considered a form of brigandage, is raised by the economic and social conditions of desert life to the rank of a national institution. It lies at the base of the economic structure of Bedouin pastoral society."[10]

---

[9] Quoted in Abdul Jabbar al-Rawi, Al Badiyah (The Desert), (3rd ed.; Baghdad: n.p., 1972), pp.267-268.

Around these central activities of appropriation-expropriation revolved the tribal culture, history and lore of bedouin life. Tribes flourished and languished in terms of their fortunes with camel herding and raiding--the cooperative and competitive aspects of camel pastoralism. And the maximum mobility and autonomy that camel pastoralism provided made it a fiercely independent, maurauding lifestyle antagonistic to the settled and civilized ways of agriculture and trade. Around camel pastoralism developed the mystique of haughty independence, kinship fealty and personal integrity that were the characteristics of a communal lifestyle contemptuous of property, intransigent to organized authority and independent of exploitable resources or surpluses (save camels).

---

[10] Philip K. Hitti, History of the Arabs (8th ed.; London: Macmillan & Co. Ltd., 1964), p.25.

To the aristocrats of the desert, all other modes of production were dialectically related. Other nomadic of semi-nomadic groups, organized and specialized along tribal lines--sheepherding, smiths, camel merchants, etc.--lived in a subordinate symbiosis with them. Urban centers established alliances with them to establish and protect trade routes; at the same time, living in trepidation of their occasional mauruading outbursts from the desert; and governments cajoled and coopted their leaders into the aristocracy of the cities. The history of the entire Middle East is intimately connected with the ebb and flow of the bedouin tribes who were both the scourge to and the well-spring of the great urban civilizations that dominate its history since antiquity.[11]

Bedouin Origins.

From this turbulent background of nomadic tribal life emerges the origins of Kuwait's history. According to traditions related by Kuwaiti historians,[12] in the late 17th Century intra-tribal conflict within the 'Anizah tribe (one of the largest bedouin tribes inhabiting Najd and North Arabia) resulted in the expulsion from the area of Hidar (in the district of Aflaj in the southwestern part of Najd) of a federation of families.[13] The Bani Utub (sons of the trekkers, as the emigres were subsequently called) embarked upon emigration northeastward, first seeking refuge in Qatar, where they spent about fifty years. According to Khaz'al:[14]

---

[11] See Samir Amin, Unequal Development, pp.36-48, for an overview of the relationship of the bedouin tribes to Middle Eastern history.

---

[12] There are no written records of the history of the Bani Utub. The history, preserved in local tradition, was first recorded by the Kuwaiti historian 'Abd al-'Aziz al-Rushaid in 1926. This tradition has been supplemented and modified by subsequent histories. The account related here is generally substantiated by the histories, unless otherwise noted. Ahmad Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia - 1750 - 1800: The Rise and Development of Bahrain and Kuwait (Beirut: Khayats, 1965), pp.48-51, provides an examination of the various traditions.

[13] 'Abd al-'Aziz al-Rushaid, Tarikh al-Kuwayt (The History of Kuwait), (Beirut: Dar Mahaahat al-Hayat, n.d.), p.32, provides a detailed description of the factions involved in the conflict. It is noteworthy that Curzon, Vol. 2, pp.268-329, notes several migrations of Arabian tribes into southwestern Persia in the same period. The period appears to have been one of substantial emigration from Central Arabia, then, and may have been the result of drought as observed by Al-Rushaid, Curzon and H.R.P. Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours (London: George Allen and Unwin, Ltd., 1956), p.26, and Abu Hakima, p.42.

> Ahl Hasan conquered Ahl Hidar and expelled their enemies. Among them were al-Sabah. They were forced to leave to Qatar, seeking refuge under Ahl Musallam, the rulers of Qatar at the time. After they were there for some time, however, the Ahl Musallam became worried and were afraid of their strength and forced them to leave Qatar. They [the emigres] rode dhows [Arab Gulf sailing vessels] and took to the sea. This was the year 1086 hijari (1676).

The Ahl Musallam followed the Bani Utub,[15] and in Ras al-Tanurra (between Bahrain and Hasa) a battle between the two tribal groups occurred. The Bani Utub, victorious, continued their march, arrived in the area of al-Mukhraq and dispersed from there. According to Khaz'al:[16]

---

[14] Husayn Khalaf al-Shaykh Khaz'al, Tarikh al-Kuwayt al-Siyasi (The Political History of Kuwait), Vol. 1 (Beirut: Matabu' Dar al-Kutub, 1962), p.41. The word Ahl (pronounced Aal) means family of or people of and in the tribal context generally denotes a lineage. al, on the other hand is the article "the", and generally denotes the immediate descendants of a person.

[15] There are conflicting reports as to why the Ahl Musallam gave pursuit. Khaz'al (p.41) suggests the Ahl Musallam regretted their departure and wished to return them to Qatar. Mahmoud, on the other hand, suggests that while in Qatar, one of the Bani Utub killed a Qatarian, incurring a blood fued between the two tribal groups: Husayn Sulaiman Mahmoud, al-Kuwayt: Madhiha wa Hadhruha (Kuwait: Its Past and Present), (Baghdad: al-Ahliyah Bookshop, 1968), p.148.

[16] Khaz'al, pp.41-42.

> Some of them lived in Subiyah. One lived in Abbadan and some stayed in Mukhraq. As for al-Sabah, al-Khalifah, al-Zayyid, al-Jalaahmen, and the Ma'awdah, they settled closer to the Shatt al-Arab in today's Um Qasir. They remained there, working in piracy . . . . That kind of work was accepted and common in Basra and is similar to the raiding inland among the Arab tribes.

The Ottoman Government, however, forced them to leave. Regrouping in Subiyah, the domain of the Dhfur tribe, the Bani Utub were threatened by the Dhfur and forced to leave.[17]

Sometime in the early seventeenth century,[18] they began arriving at the site of modern Kuwait City. According to al-Qina'ie:[19]

> Their migration to Kuwait was gradual because after leaving Qatar, they were dispersed in different lands . . . . Then they began arriving in Kuwait and were followed by a lot of other people, Arabs and Persians.

Kuwait was in the domain of the Bani Khalid, a powerful bedouin tribe which dominated northeast Arabia.

---

[17] Mahmoud, p.149.

[18] The date of arrival to Kuwait is subject to considerable speculation. See, for example, Abu Hakima, pp. 50-52.

[19] Yusuf Bin Isa al-Qina'ie, Safahat min Tarikh al-Kuwayt (Pages from the History of Kuwait), (4th ed.; Kuwait: Government Printing House, 1968), p.9.

Here there was a supply of sweet water and a splendid natural landlocked harbour. The shaikh of the Bani Khalid maintained a small fort[20] for storage of food and ammunition. He afforded protection to the Bani Utub and gave them the fort and surrounding area.[21]

The Bani Utub's tribulations in the period reflect the intimate relationship between the tribe and its dirah (tribal range). Alienated from their dirah, the Bani Utub were alienated from the dominion of their tribe--its traditional pastures as well as cooperative kinship structures. In the domain of other tribes, the Bani Utub were suspect and vulnerable intruders. The story of their steady progression northeastward reflects their move away from camel pastoralism. Unable to follow the regular migration paths in the search for pastureland that was the essential pattern of camel pastoralism, the Bani Utub were probably forced to diversify their productive means, attaching to them segments of other pastoral and non-pastoral groups along the way.[22] In Qatar and other ports of the Gulf to which they dispersed they were exposed to the maritime, merchant, pearling and other activities. The point to be made here is that by the time they arrived in Kuwait, the Bani Utub had moved significantly away from camel pastoralism, acquired a cohesive tribal identity of their own and were accompanied by a diverse cross-section of economic groups attached to them in a client-tribal relationship.

---

[20] The word Kuwait is the dimunutive of the Arabic word kut which designates a fort built close to water. al-Rushaid, p.30.

[21] al-Rushaid, p.30.

The alienation of the Bani Utub from their tribal domain, however, must be placed in the larger context of the great transformations nascent in Central Arabia at the time of their departure. Bordered by the declining Ottoman Empire on one side and an emerging Persia on the other, the bedouin tribes of Central Arabia nevertheless remained outside the control of either power. Camel pastoralism and the isolation of the desert rendered them largely independent and impervious to foreign interference. However, the carvan trade routes which began whithering with the shift from Mediterranean to Atlantic trade in the 15th and 16th centuries were enjoying a renaissance as a result of the imperialist competition between the expansive capitalist powers of Western Europe.[23] With the resurgence of trade through the area, the bedouin tribes were again being drawn out of their desert isolation and into the mainstream of world history. Some of the powerful bedouin families were already shifting their attention from the pastures of the desert to the trade routes and urban centers of trade that were emerging in the area, precipitating inter- and intra- tribal conflicts as expropriation from trade became a real alternative to appropriation from camel pastoralism.[24] Occurring on the eve of the

---

[22] Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours (pp.26, 40) identifies the al Zayyid, a family known for the number of sheep it owned (today in Kuwait known as al-Ghanim) as joining the Bani Utub in Qatar. It may be that it was in Qatar or one of the other ports that the Baharina (master shipwrights of the Arab Gulf) first joined the Bani Utub, thus providing the technical basis for Kuwait's subsequent merchant economy, discussed later in the chapter. See, also, Abu Hakima, p.51, who attributes the knowledge of seafaring to their period in Qatar or al-Hasa.

---

[23] See the next chapter for a discussion of this.

[24] See, Abu Hakima, pp.38-43, for a discussion of trade and tribal conflict, with particular reference to the Bani Khalid; and pp.125-144 for a discussion of the conflict between the Bani Khalid and the Wahabi movement.

Wahabi unification of Central Arabia,[25] the Bani Utub migration must be understood in the context of the substantial changes already underway in the area. Their transition from nomadic pastoralism to a maritime mode of production is one aspect of these changes.

The Structural Basis of Kuwaiti Settlement

At the time of the arrival of the Bani Utub at the site of Kuwait City, it is reported that the area had no permanent settlement,[26] but was inhabited by groups of bedouin and fishermen.[27] The area could support no agriculture at all, "hardly even a kitchen garden,"[28] but the Gulf offered abundant supplies of fish. Little is known about the Bani Utub in their initial settlement of the site; it appears that they did not constitute more than 10 - 15 per cent of the subsequently settled population.[29] Among the earliest tribal sections or families of the Bani Utub to settle in Kuwait were al-Jalaahmeh, al-Sabah, al-Khalifah and al-Ma'awdah.[30]

---

[25] There has been excessive concentration on the religious rather than political-economic causes of the Wahabi movement. The latter, in fact, are generally treated as effects. See, for example, G. S. Rentz, 'Abd al-Wahhab (1703/1792) and the Beginnings of Unitarian Empire in Arabia (Ph.D., History, California University, 1948); and R. Bayly Winder, Saudi Arabia in the Nineteenth Century (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1965).

[26] al-Rushaid, p.31.

[27] al-Qina'ie, p.9.

[28] Lorimer, vol. 2, pt. 2B, p.1052.

The transition from nomadic to sedentary settlement was already well underway by mid-century. "In the first fifty years after its foundation," noted Lorimer, "the town of Kuwait grew rapidly in wealth and importance . . . ."[31] In 1760, the German traveller Carsten Niebuhr visited Kuwait and noted that it was a thriving commercial port of about 10,000 population which sustained itself on pearling, trading and fishing and had some 800 boats.[32]

---

[29] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1006, for example, reports that "in 1820 was represented as containing an armed population of 5,000 to 7,000 men, of whom only a few hundred were 'Utub by race . . . ."

[30] al-Qina'ie, p.9. Sayf Marzouk al-Shamlan, Min Tarikh al-Kuwayt (From the History of Kuwait), (Cairo: Matbat Nahdhat Misr, 1959), p.109, includes al-Zayyid (who joined the Bani Utub in Qatar), Ahl-Rumi, Ahl-Sayf and Ahl-Bin Ali among the earliest settlers.

[31] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1001.

From the beginning, the transition from nomadic to sedentary life was based upon the industries of fishing, pearling and commerce with desert and coastal tribes. The Arab Gulf has been an important sea route between India, the Middle East and Africa since ancient times. "The Gulf," observed Arnold T. Wilson in his definitive history of the sea, "has a place in the written history of mankind older than that of any other inland sea."[33] Ship-building, sea-faring and pearling were age-old productive means of the many scattered communities along its coast. These groups--whether they accompanied the Bani Utub to Kuwait or arrived subsequently--were likely the productive basis of the sea-oriented industries that were flourishing when Niebuhr visited Kuwait City in 1760.

From the beginning, however, control of the productive forces remained in the hands of the Bani Utub--the aristocrats of the desert transformed into the ruling class of the town. It is reported in the traditions of Kuwaiti historians that a tripartite pact among three of the original Anizah families that settled in Kuwait was made in 1716, in effect dividing control of the productive means among themselves. According to Khaz'al:[34]

---

[32] Kuwait Chamber of Commerce and Industry, Dalil al-Kuwayt (Guide to Kuwait), (Kuwait: Chamber of Commerce and Industry, October 1965), p.145, hereafter referred to as Guide to Kuwait. The accuracy of Niebuhr's observations cannot be assessed as there are no other figures available until a later period. Even if he over-estimated the population or the number of boats by 100 per cent, however, it still indicates a substantial settlement in a relatively short period of time.

[33] Arnold T. Wilson, The Persian Gulf: An Historical Sketch from the Earliest Times to the Beginning of the Twentieth Century (London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd., 1928), p.1.

> In the year 1129 hijari (1716), the chiefs of the most important three tribes that inhabited Kuwait entered into an alliance. These were Sabah bin Jabar bin Salman bin Ahmad, Khalifah bin Mohammed and Jabar bin Rahmat al'iIbi (the chief of the Jalaahmeh). The conditions [of the alliance provided that] Sabah will have leadership in the affairs of government, in consultation with them [i.e., the other two chiefs]; Khalifah will have leadership of the financial affairs in commerce; and Jabar will control the affairs of work on the sea. All profits were to be equally divided among them.

Whether the tradition is valid nor not, it reflects the bedouin structure transfered to the Kuwaiti community. The heritage of power that differentiated camel pastoralists from other classes of producers in the desert and was ideologically articulated in the descent lineages that in effect attempted to close access to participation in this power, in the sedentary community became the basis of differentiation between appropriators and expropriators. In the sedentary community, the nomadic tribal structure of classes of producers became the basis of a nascent social class structure articulated in a tribal context. In effect, the Bani Utub became a class in themselves by their asserted right of control over the factors of production--fishing, pearling and commerce.

---

[34] Khaz'al, p.42. This tradition is also reported by Mahmoud, p.149. One of the earliest accounts of the Bani Utub in English also reports this: Francis Warden, "Historical Sketch of the Uttoobee Tribe of Arabs (Bahrein) from the year 1716 to the year 1817," Bombay Selections (Bombay), XXIV, 1856 and reproduced in Ahmad Abu Hakima, ed., History of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 2 (Kuwait: Kuwait Government Press, 1970), pp.158-170.

In early Kuwait, however, this was only nascent. The generation and distribution of a meagre social product appropriated from the desert and the sea did not really represent a new development of the forces of production; rather, it represented a new articulation of already existing forces. Early Kuwait was a subsistence economy, albeit relatively prosperous, and the character of production relations still essentially communal. The productive forces maintained the tribal character of the desert, providing a tribal pattern to the organization of labour and politics.

Economic Organization

The boats Niebuhr observed were the pearling and fishing fleets. From the beginning, the basis of Kuwait's settlement was the sea, and boat construction must have been one of the initial industries of the settlement.

According to Winstone and Freeth:[35]

> The development of the intense maritime activity upon which Niebuhr later commented must have depended upon an early influx of Baharina people, for this special group have always been the master shipwrights of the Gulf . . . . Within their close-knit community the traditional skills of boat-building were passed from father to son, the Baharina has a virtual monopoly in this trade.

However, neither Kuwait nor any of the Gulf area for that matter has timber. Most of the timber supply for the Gulf came from India; but in this early period of settlement the level of development of the Kuwaiti boat construction industry was primitive. The small boats built there were confined to the Gulf,[36] and Kuwait must have picked up the timber from other ports within the Gulf supplied with timber from India.

What this reflects is the close association between commerce and all aspects of production in early Kuwait. In fact, its mode of production was based on two pillars --pearling and commerce. Pearls harvested from the rich pearl banks of the Gulf for the luxury markets of the world were exchanged for basic consumption necessities. Lacking any agricultural production of its own and with fishing and some sheep herding as the only means of subsistence production, Kuwait not only lacked a surplus product; it lacked most of the necessities and depended almost entirely on trade for its subsistence. Pearl production provided the means of acquiring the surplus product and commodities from centers all over the Gulf, either for consumption in Kuwait or for exchange with the nomadic and semi-nomadic tribes who stopped in Kuwait on their annual migrations to exchange their surplus product. Thus, pearling and commerce were the economic basis of settlement.

---

[35] Zahra Freeth and Victor Winstone, Kuwait: Prospect and Reality (London: George Allen and Unwin Ltd., 1972), p.57.

[36] al-Rushaid, p.54.

There was, then, a direct relationship between capital accumulation from pearling and the development of commerce. Pearling provided the capital for commerce, and commerce in turn provided the basis for perpetuation of the pearling industry--the material subsistence of the community as well as the material needs of the pearling industry. For both pearling and commerce the source of supply was external. The markets for pearls were also external. For commerce, however, the market was both internal and external. The viability of the internal market depended upon the rate of exploitation of pearls--in terms of both their appropriation and marketing. But the development of the pearling industry depended upon the commerce that provided the timber and other material resources for development of the fleet, as well as the subsistence requirements of the community. It was toward this subsistence oriented market that Kuwaiti commerce was directed, and it was the needs of this market that propelled the initial development of both pearling and commerce.

Thus, the technical and social organization of pearling and commerce were dynamically interlinked, providing the basis for a rapid development of productive forces. This development took the form of tribal organization articulated in Kuwait as nomadic, semi-nomadic and sedentary labour. While the nomadic tribes still represented independent producers exchanging their surplus product as autonomous producers, the new articulation of the semi-nomadic and sedentary groups surmounted the boundaries of the tribe as a division of labour. The labour of this production was differentiated along tribal lines. The al-Awazim and al-Rashaida tribes supplied the products from agriculture and fishing. The limited amount of agriculture that could be pursued in the desert occurred around oases and wells, and semi-nomadic groups followed the rains to exploit the agriculture where it existed. They traded their products with Kuwait for supplies, and settled in and around Kuwait during the dry season and sustained themselves through fishing and pearl-diving.[37] The semi-nomadic shepherd tribes provided the products of sheep and wool for the community, also following the rains for the essential grazing land and centering their trading activities around Kuwait.[38] The al-Sulb tribe provided the iron-mongers and smiths for the community. The products of camels (from food, clothing and fuel to beauty aids) were supplied by the noble sharif tribes who made Kuwait their supply center on their annual migrations.[39]

Thus, the tribal framework of organization was maintained, but within Kuwait the tribe ceased to exist as a self-sufficient, self-perpetuating unit of production. Within the new articulation, it was transformed into a unit of occupational stratification and a mode for the reproduction of different kinds of labour.[40]

---

[37] Mohammed Mahjub, al-Hijrah wa al-Taghayyur al-Bina'i fi al-Mujtama' al-Kuwayti (Migration and Structural Change in Kuwait Society), (Kuwait: Wakalat al-Mutboa'at, n.d.), p.88.

[38] Ibid., pp.87-88.

[39] Ibid., pp.116-118.

[40] The books of Sayf Marzouk al-Shamlan, Tarikh al-Ghaus 'ala al-Lu'lu' fi al-Kuwayt wa- al-Khalij al-Arabi (History of Pearling in Kuwait and the Arab Gulf), (Kuwait: Government of Kuwait, 1975), and 'Adil Muhammad al-'Ahd al-Mughni, al-Iqtisad al-Kuwayti al-Qadim (Traditional Kuwaiti Economy), (Kuwait, 1977) taken together reveal the social, technical and economic organization of Kuwait's pre-oil economy. In particular, they reveal the unique relationship of tribal groups exchanging their surplus as autonomous producers (agriculture, animal husbandry, fishing), tribal groups as interdependent units in a division of labour (blacksmiths, shipwrights and producers

Sea-faring and pearl-diving represented the essential labour of Kuwait's mode of production, and ships the socially produced means of production. The labour for both sea-faring and pearl-diving was derived principally from semi-nomadic tribes, while the Baharina produced the boats. The Bani Utub emerged as a class of independent captains of their own boats, engaged directly in appropriation from the sea, marketing and commerce.

In this early period, then, the boat represented the unit of production, independently owned by the captain. The product of pearling boats represented commodities produced for exchange to merchants of the international markets.[41] Petty pearl merchants in Kuwait (tawawish) purchased pearls directly from the captains either in the diving areas or city markets and resold them to the whole-sale merchants (tujjar) of Bombay who channelled them to the world markets.[42] These petty merchants constituted the financial class in Kuwait. The crew worked for pre-arranged shares of the ship's earnings.

---

of the tools of fishing, etc.) and tribal groups supplying what was essentially a form of wage labour (divers, sea-farers).

[41] Guide to Kuwait, p.73.

[42] Lorimer, vol. 1, pt. 2, p.2236.

In commerce, the distribution between capital and labour was similarly organized, though its basis was not commodity production per se, but the transformation through commerce of surplus product produced elsewhere into commodities for exchange in local and regional markets. Basra was one of the first ports of supply for Kuwaiti commerce.[43] Located only 80 miles from Kuwait, it was accessible by both sea and desert routes. As one of the busiest ports on the Gulf serving as the transfer point between Gulf and caravan commerce from India, the Arabian Peninsula and for Ottoman and European commerce, Basra was the emporium of the Gulf.

So long as the owners and labourers were intimately related in the production-exchange-consumption cycle and the character of the exchange of labour, the tools of labour and the products of labour was generally symmetrical, the communal character of tribal relations over-rode the class character of production relations. The cycle was subsistence, not accumulation oriented, and the only effective distinction between labour and capital was the distinction between captains and crew--a tribally delineated distinction. Capital had no independent existence but was merely an integral part of a subsistence cycle. Nevertheless, within the new articulation was a fundamental division in terms of the generation and distribution of the social product that was class, not tribal, in nature.

---

[43] al-Rushaid, p.54.

Political Organization

In its formation, Kuwait served as a trading center for the tribes of the Bani Khalid. It remained under the suzerainty and protection of the amir of the Bani Khalid, but throughout the 18th century intra-tribal strife and growing Wahabi power in Central Arabia gradually weakened the tribe's authority in the area. The Bani Utub were able to establish their independence and sometime in the seventeen fifties elected Sabah I as shaikh.

There are many different traditions as to why Sabah I was selected as shaikh. Irrespective of the personal qualities attributed to him, however, the importance of relations with the tribes in the area must be considered as primary in the light of the eclipsing role of the Bani Khalid. The very survival of Kuwait depended upon relations with the tribes. First, the community depended upon the tribesmen for the production of basic necessities. Second, Kuwait required protection against perennial tribal raiding. No longer protected by Bani Khalid power, Kuwait required a shaikh both respected and feared for the number of tribesmen he could call into arms in an emergency. Third, the labour for pearling, fishing and commerce was supplied by the tribes.

Apparently, unlike many of the Utbi families whose interests turned toward the sea (and whose ties with the bedouins consequently diminished), the Sabah family remained oriented toward the desert, apparently based on their interest in the active caravan trade between Aleppo and the Gulf.[44] They continued an active relationship with the bedouin tribes, camping out with them regularly and marrying from among them. In the desert, the tribes paid zakat (tribute) to the paramount shaikh of their area, and very early in the process of settlement, the Sabah house, because of its apparent interest in the caravan trade, had achieved this role, "partly by means of matrimonial alliances with other tribes in the neighborhood."[45] Zakat, in fact, was an important source of income for the Sabah family.[46] Sabah was selected as shaikh, then, because, according to al-Shamlan:[47]

---

[44] There is actually very little to document the Sabah's role in the caravan trade. Several Kuwaiti historians refer to it only tangentially. See al-Rushaid, p.54; and p.121. Nevertheless, the strength of this is indicated in the accounts of Dr. Edward Ives who visited the Kharij Island in March 1758 and made direct contact with Sabah I to arrange desert transport to Aleppo. The Shaikh was able to guarantee safe transport to Aleppo, indicating that "the Arabs of the desert route from Kuwait to Aleppo were on good terms with the Shaikh." Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, p.56, further concludes that "the wealth of the Shaikh . . . may be judged by his refusal of the Baron's offer of 1,000 piastres when he had asked for 2,000, despite the fact that bargaining was not undesirable."

[45] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1001.

> . . . Sabah all year around remained in Kuwait or around it as his work was on the land. As for the majority, their work was on the sea with navigation, fishing, pearling and such. So they were absent from Kuwait for periods.

Thus, Sabah power was based upon the family's relationship to the desert and consequently their interests closely allied to the nomadic mode of production, while the economic life of the community was more closely tied to the maritime mode. This separation of interests within the Utbi class was merely a functional division of power in a social equilibrium between modes of production. But the equilibrium was momentary, and its disintegration led to a changing balance of power.

The Changing Balance of Power:
1762 - 1896

Both pearling and commerce were related to sets of external factors in such a way as to disturb the momentary equilibrium of interests differentially coalesced around them. Three factors uniformly affected all pearl-diving units of production: access to the pearl banks, level of development of the diving industry, and access to the pearl markets. Commerce, on the other hand, could be distinguished between desert and sea commerce. While the development of desert commerce was principally affected by relationships with the tribes of the area, sea commerce was principally affected by the level of development of the transport industry, access to supplies of marketable products, and access to external markets (a factor related to desert commerce in the case of inland or overland markets). In its initiation, both desert and sea commerce were oriented to the subsistence requirements of the internal market, and this was directly dependent upon pearling. The interests of pearling (which in effect represented the financial interests of Kuwait) were, not surprisingly, the first to emerge as a class of self-conscious interests.

---

[46] 'Abd al-'Aziz Husayn, al-Mujtama' al-'Arabi bil Kuwayt (Arab Society in Kuwait), (Cairo: Institute for Higher Arab Studies, 1960), p.55.

[47] al-Shamlan, From the History of Kuwait, p.116.

The Emigration of al-Khalifah, 1766

The pearl banks were located in an almost continuous chain along the Arab side of the Gulf's coast, but the richest banks were in the area of Bahrain,[48] some

---

[48] Lorimer, vol. 1, pt. 2, p.2221.

300 - 400 kilometers from Kuwait. Access to these banks was a primary concern of the pearl merchants and diving captains (who were primarily of the al-Khalifah and al-Jalaahmeh branches).

In 1766, the whole of al-Khalifah and shortly thereafter a major section of al-Jalaahmeh branches, left Kuwait with the intention of settling in Bahrain, but the rulers of Bahrain (the Shaikh of the Abu Shahr tribe which had suzerainty over the island and paid tribute to the Shah of Persia) did not permit them to settle there.[49] From there they proceeded to Qatar, not 50 kilometers southwest of Bahrain, and settled at Zubara. This settlement rapidly developed as an important Gulf port because of its participation in the rich Bahrain pearl fisheries.[50] In 1783, with the assistance of Kuwait, al-Khalifah conquered Bahrain and made it the center of their authority.[51]

Various reasons for the migration of al-Khalifah and al-Jalaahmeh from Kuwait have been advanced in local tradition.[52] Whatever the case, their self-conscious direction toward the Bahrain pearl fisheries--an area well known to them from their earlier settlement in Qatar before arriving at Kuwait--gives credibility to the explanation of Francis Warden in one of the earliest studies of the Utbi tribe in English (1856). He states that "the accumulation of wealth rendered the mercantile branch desirous of seceding from the original league, that they might singly enjoy to add to their acquired riches" by participating directly in the lucrative pearl fisheries.[53]

---

[49] Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, pp.66-67.

[50] Ibid., p.71.

[51] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.788.

The migration of al-Khalifah had two major effects upon Kuwait. First, it consolidated the leadership role of the Sabah family in the community. In 1762, Abdullah had succeeded his father Sabah I as Shaikh, and with the exodus of al-Khalifah and al-Jalaahmeh, there was no serious challenge left in Kuwait to Sabah authority.[54]

---

[52] See, Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, pp.65-55, who compares these traditions.

[53] "Historical Sketch of the Uttoobee Tribe . . .", pp.158-159.

[54] According to the historical tradition maintained by al-Khalifah, the ruling house of Bahrain to the present, it was the question of succession that precipitated the migration of al-Khalifah, who expected to succeed Sabah I. See Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, p.66.

Second, it gave Sabah a tribal ally on the coast in the important area of the pearl fisheries. Whether the migration materially diminished the pearling industry in Kuwait in the short-run is not known. Even if it did, however, the transfer of financial capital from Basra to Baghdad in 1775, to be discussed subsequently, facilitated the rapid recovery of the industry; the Utub settlement at Zubara provided a secure channel of access facilitating the expansion of this capital; and with the conquest of Bahrain in 1783, a direct access to Manama, one of the busiest ports for commerce and pearl marketing in the Gulf. There was apparently no major rupture of relations between al-Khalifah and al-Sabah as a result of the migration, for in 1776 many of the notables of Kuwait (including members of the Sabah family) took refuge in Zubara as a result of the Persian occupation of Basra, and in 1783, Kuwait aided al-Khalifah in the conquest of Bahrain.[55]

The Persian Siege of Basra, 1775

In March 1775, the forces of the Persian ruler, Karim Khan, began a siege of Basra which finally ended in the city's occupation in April 1776. While Kuwait remained aloof from the Persian-Ottoman conflict[56], the occupation of Basra had several major effects upon Kuwait. First of all, as the major port in the Gulf for the land-sea transfer of goods in east-west and north-south commerce passing through the Middle East, Basra was a major entrepot of world commerce. From its beginning, Kuwait had enjoyed the benefits of siphoning off the fringe of this commerce because of its proximity to Basra and its natural harbour. However, as explained by Lorimer:[57]

---

[55] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1001-1003.

> Kuwait, of which the prosperity was at this time considered to stand necessarily in an inverse ratio to that of Basra, benefited greatly through the occupation of the latter town by the Persians, in consequence of which the whole Indian trade with Baghdad, Aleppo, Smyrna and Constantinople was between 1775 and 1779 diverted to it. Even after this, until 1781, merchandise for Aleppo was sometimes forwarded by direct caravan from Kuwait, thus escaping the duties levied by the Pasha of Baghdad on goods forwarded through Basra. By 1790 Kuwait had begun to share in the commercial prosperity which the seizure of Bahrain had brought to the whole 'Utub tribe by drawing theminto the carrying trade; and goods were imported from Masqat, Zubarah, Bahrain and Qatif. Merchants were efficiently protected at Kuwait, and the duty on imported goods was levied at the low rate of 1 per cent, *ad valorem*.

---

[56] See Abu Hakima, *History of Eastern Arabia*, pp.94-96, for a discussion of Kuwait's position in the conflict.

[57] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1003-1004.

The shift of commerce from Basra to Kuwait was accompanied by the migration of merchants. Lorimer observed that:[58]

> A noteworthy consequence of the Persian occupation of Basra was the migration of a number of merchants to Kuwait and the removal of others, who did not feel themselves secure even there, from Kuwait to Zubarah in Qatar. The trade and general growth of both Arab seaports were strongly stimulated by these events.

Development of the Boat Construction Industry

The transfer of externally oriented commerce (transit trade) and merchant capital to Kuwait provided both the incentive and surplus capital necessary for the development of the boat construction industry on which depended both the pearling industry and sea commerce. By 1780, Kuwait had already acquired ships--probably imported from India--large enough to make the sea voyage to India,[59] giving Kuwaiti merchants direct access not only to Indian goods but also to the timber necessary for Kuwaiti ship construction. Although there are no statistics available, it is reported that this industry developed to such a level that Kuwait became an exporter of ships to the entire Gulf. In 1905, Lorimer observed that "Kuwait appears to be the principal place where native craft are built."[60] He reported that 20 - 25 vessels were turned out annually and about 300 carpenters gained their livelihood by boat-building.[61] The migration to Kuwait of merchant capital was an important stimulus to the development of this industry.[62]

---

[58] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, pp.146-147.

[59] Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, p.175.

But the development of this industry was not important in itself in Kuwait's mode of production. Rather, it was its relationship to the development of the commercial and pearling fleets. Here again, statistics are wanting because of the lack of records at the time. Nevertheless, there is sufficient evidence to indicate the continuous growth of the fleets over the period and the changing relationship between small and large-cargo vessels. As early as 1790, an official report to the British Government in India on the commerce of Arabia and Persia noted that the tribes of the Bani Utub (including Kuwait, Zubarra and Bahrain at that time) had become the most powerful tribes navigating the Gulf:[63]

---

[60] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 2, p.2321.

[61] Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, p.1054.

[62] al-Rushaid, pp.54-55.

> Their gallivats, the Boats are numerous and large, and they have engrossed the whole of the Freight Trade carried on between Muscat and the Ports on the Arabian shore, of the Persian Gulf, and a principal part of the Freight Trade, carried on between Muscat and Bussora.

Lorimer noted that in 1829 Kuwait was credited with having a mercantile fleet of fifteen Baghlahs (a sea-going vessel) with a cargo capacity of from 450 to 100 tons, twenty Batifs and Baghlahs (vessels used chiefly in Gulf commerce) with cargo capacities from 120 to 50 tons, and 150 other boats used chiefly in Gulf and Shatt-al-Arab commerce with cargo capacities of from 150 to 15 tons.[64] By 1905, he reported that the mercantile fleet included 36 sea-going cargo vessels, 50 coastal cargo vessels, and 50 Ballams engaged chiefly in trade from the Shatt-al-Arab.[65]

---

[63] "Report on the Commerce of Arabia and Persia by Samuel Manesty and Harford Jones, 1790," p.32, reproduced in Abu Hakima, History of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 2, pp.21-82. This volume is a compilation of British documents and European literature (principally accounts of travellers to the area) relevant to Kuwait available to about 1830.

[64] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1006.

[65] Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, pp.1053-1054.

The growth of the pearling fleet over the period was similar. There was a steady transition from the small pearling boats with crews of five to the larger ships with crews of up to 70,[66] reflecting the development of the boat construction industry in terms of more sophisticated and complex vessels able to carry larger crews longer distances. In fact, there was a great deal of overlap between the commercial and pearling fleets. Many of the boats that engaged in commerce in the winter months shifted their operations to pearling in the summer months. Although the actual estimates of the size of the fleet engaged in pearling vary considerably,[67] nevertheless by about 1890 Kuwaiti pearling ships were engaging in pearling operations off the Ceylon coast in

---

[66] 'Isa al-Qatami, Dalil al-Muhtar fi 'ilm al-Bihar (The Guide for the Confused on the Science of Navigation), (4th ed., Kuwait: Government of Kuwait Press, 1976), p.200.

[67] The variation in estimates of the size is quite large, as the table below indicates:

Year	Number of Boats	Source
1833	1,500	Mahmoud, p.43.
1907	461	Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 2, p.2259.
1907	1,000	Loghat el-Arab (Baghdad), No. 7 (December 1913), p.320.

the winter months when the season for pearling in the Gulf had passed. Lorimer noted that by 1905 "no less than 3,000" pearl fishers from Kuwait pearled in Ceylon waters regularly.[68]

The Kuwaiti historian 'Abd al-'Aziz Husayn summarized the development of the boat construction industry in Kuwait accordingly:[69]

> Kuwaitis imported their first ships from other ports in the Gulf or from India. Then they began building ships themselves and became experts in this industry until it became one of the most important industries in Kuwait. The Kuwaiti ships had a great reputation at sea. They began innovating in this industry and created the well known kind [of ship] called Bom which is purely from the experiences of the Kuwaitis at sea and proved to be the best in passing the oceans to India and the

---

[67] Continued

Year	Number of Boats	Source
1912	1,500	Loghat el-Arab (Baghdad, No. 7 (December 1913), p.320.
1913	812	al-Shamlan, History of Pearling in Kuwait and the Arab Gulf, p.262.

Part of the problem of determining the size is the lack of records over the period and the consequent dependence upon ad hoc estimates. A large source of error in such estimates is what craft are actually being counted among the fleet--i.e., whether the small boats pearling in nearby waters are included or not.

[68] Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, p.1053.

[69] Husayn, pp.44-45.

> eastern coasts of Arica. All the wood which was used in building ships and all the instruments that were needed were imported from India. Ships for fishing, ships for pearling and ships for long distance travel were all built in Kuwait. Each one of these professions had its special ships. The year was divided into two parts: in the summer people worked in diving for four months; and in the winter they travelled on the big commercial ships for five months.

Commerce: The Transition to External Markets

While the siege and occupation of Basra in 1775 by the Persians shifted the route of long-distance trade to Kuwait, nevertheless this was temporary and by 1781 the major portion of this trade had shifted back to Basra.[70] What this period left in Kuwait was a realization among Kuwait's merchant captain community of the huge profits to be made in transit trade and a small group of wealthy merchant emigres from Basra with sufficient capital accumulated to finance the development of the maritime fleets. Thereafter, Kuwait became very active in the carrying trade between Masqat and Basra--the two principal ports of the Gulf "through one or other of which passed the great bulk of the goods that either entered or left the Gulf."[71] Lorimer summarized the nature of Gulf commerce between 1779 and 1797 accordingly:[72]

---

[70] With the death of Karim Khan in 1779, the Persian forces evacuated Basra and it peacefully reverted back to Ottoman jurisdiction. See Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, p.147.

> The leading articles imported by way of the Gulf into both Persia and Turkish 'Iraq were Bengal piece-goods, Coromandel chintzes, Madras long-cloth, cotton yarn, and various cotton manufactures of Malabar, Broach, Cambay, Surat and Gujarat; English woolen goods; silks; Arabian coffee; sugar and sugar candy; spices, condiments and perfumes; indigo; drugs; chinaware; and metals . . . . . The trade in coffee was one of great volume and importance; half the produce of Yaman, it was estimated, found its way to the Gulf; and from the Gulf not only the whole of the surrounding countries, but even parts of Europe, were supplied with the berry.

About this time, too, the Qawasim tribe of Ras-al-Khaimah began indulging in large scale piracy; and although piracy was not a characteristic of Kuwait, by 1817 "vessels from Kuwait frequented the ports of Bahrain and were the chief means by which plunder brought to Bahrain by Qasimi pirates was conveyed across the

---

[71] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, p.166.

[72] Ibid., p.165. Also see Manesty and Jones, pp.21-46; and "Extracts from Report of Capt. Malcolm on the State of the Trade between Persia and India and Suggestions for the Means of Improving it, 1800," in Abu Hakima, History of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 2, pp.95-102.

Gulf for disposal in Persia."[73] In this period, too, Kuwait became one of the principal centers through which Indian merchandise reached the Central Arabian interior,[74] and became a center for the smuggling of goods across the desert to Baghdad and Aleppo.[75] Based upon a careful examination of the records available for the period to 1800, Abu Hakima concluded:[76]

> The 'Utub's share in this prosperous trade was enormous, for they participated in its conveyance both by sea and caravan. They seem to have made use of all legal and illegal means to benefit from that flow of trade. They did not hesitate to smuggle goods from Kuwait to the markets of Baghdad and Aleppo, to avoid the Basra customs. Their mercantile activities increased enormously after their conquest of Bahrain.

Production: The Transition to Units of Scale

This participation in externally oriented transit trade brought comparatively huge profits to Kuwait, but these profits accrued to private interests that consequently accumulated large fortunes, in contrast to the petty merchants who dealt in trade with the internal market. It also benefited the pearl merchants by giving them direct access to the international pearl markets of Lingeh, Manama and India. Since the returns to labour in the pearling industry of Kuwait were set by a market price in Kuwait in the exchange between pearling captains and merchants, those pearling merchants who could eliminate the middleman and deal directly in the international pearling markets realized huge profits. They, too, accumulated relatively large fortunes.[77] These fortunes were used in financing the development of Kuwaiti commercial and pearling fleets, discussed earlier.

---

[73] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1007.

[74] *Ibid.*

[75] *Ibid.*

[76] *History of Eastern Arabia*, p.180.

The social equivalent of the development of larger ships that could travel longer distances and accommodate larger crews was the marginalization of independent labour: in commerce, the independent boats engaged in petty commerce between Kuwait and the Shatt-al-Arab were gradually displaced by larger ships working on markets of scale; in pearling, the independent divers working nearby waters were marginalized by the larger pearling ships working the distant but more lucrative fisheries. Over the period, then, the unit of production was gradually shifting from the small independent boats to the larger ships, and labour was gradually losing its autonomous and semi-nomadic character as occupations in sea-pearling in the summer and maritime commerce in the winter provided year around employment.

---

[77] See al-Qan'ie, pp.60-62, who gives details of the major families and private fortunes accumulated in both commerce and pearl marketing. Also, al-Shamlan, History of Pearling . . ., p.281, who explains the difference in operations between the big pearl merchants and the petty merchants.

Nevertheless, the competition for skilled divers and crew and the higher returns being made in the exploitation of external markets no doubt brought higher returns to labour during this period of rapid expansion of commerce, and the divers and crew on the larger ships were materially better off in the transition. Although there are no actual statistics available on income because of the lack of records in Kuwait over the period, the higher standard of living is indicated by Lorimer's quotation of the estimated annual imports of Kuwait in 1829 at $500,000 and the exports at about $100,000.[78] The deficit in the balance of trade must be assumed to have been made up by Kuwait's participation in the coastal transit traffic. al-Qan'ie provides a lively description of the material improvement in the diver's condition:[79]

---

[78] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1006.

[79] al-Qan'ie, p.64.

> The condition of the diver was very weak in the beginning of Kuwait. His income was limited and his life difficult. His staple diet was year old dates, called al-hawil, fish and only two meals of rice a week. He did not use dishes but spread his food on sifrah. On that dirt was piled up and he would wash his sifrah only once a week. Then his life began to improve because of the increase in the prices of pearls. He could use dishes to eat instead of sifrah and began to eat rice for dinner with some butter. Diving continued to improve until most of Kuwait's wealth was earned from it and the number of diving dhows in the days of Mubarak al-Sabah [1896-1915] reached 812. The income from diving reached 6 million rupees in the diving season alone, which is only four months a year.

A corollary of the shift of the unit of production to larger ships was the necessity of financing the voyage. Not only did the ships have to be outfitted with equipment and supplies, but the crew had to provide their families with adequate provisions during their longer absences. In this period a system of financing began to emerge--a system that was based upon the financing of voyages by the small group of merchants with sufficient capital accumulated. In return for financing the voyage, the merchant, in the commercial case, took a percentage of the ship's earnings; and in the case of pearling, the captain was committed to sell his pearls to the merchant.[80] This

---

[80] Guide to Kuwait, p.74.

system strengthened the accumulation of wealth in a small segment of the population. Through this method not only did the financial-commercial interests consolidate their hold on the exchange process where surplus was realized but also expropriated a portion of the product.

Politics: The Transition of Power

As pointed out earlier, Sabah interests lay in the desert, and pearling and maritime commerce were only tangential to this. The caravan trade and tribal relations were its primary concern. From Sabah I's death in 1762, there were four Amirs in a direct line of descent from him who were selected in the traditional tribal manner, Abdullah, 1762 - 1812; Jabir, 1812 - 1859; Sabah II, 1859 - 1866; Abdullah, 1866 - 1892; Mohammad, 1892 - 1896. Of these rulers, al-Shamlan observed:[81]

> [They] were not privileged from most of the Kuwaiti population in any way. They were similar to the shaikh of a tribe. There was no distinction between the shaikh and members of his tribe. The power of the ruler was limited, and there were some Kuwaiti leaders who had more authority than the ruler himself.

---

[81] From the History of Kuwait, p.117.

Nevertheless, the community had in fact surpassed the subsistence character of tribal relations, and this was based upon the sea, not the desert. Furthermore, the traditional tribal character of desert politics that was the arena of power of the Sabah house was being rendered obsolete as indicated by the rise and decline of the Wahabi movement in the nineteenth century, and Sabah authority over the tribes in the area was progressively weakening, while its relations with the Ottoman Empire progressively increased in the nineteenth century.

In fact, the substructure of productive forces in Kuwait had over the period developed well beyond the political superstructure of a tribal shaikhdom, and the Sabah house had only a very peripheral relationship to this development. The real power in the community resided in the financial-commercial class that in effect controlled the development of productive forces. The Sabah house over the period had become financially dependent upon this class and politically subordinate to it.[82]

---

[82] Badr al-Din Abbas al-Khususi, Dirasat fi Tarikh al-Kuwayt al-Ijtima'i wa al-Iqtisadi: 1913 - 1961 (Studies in the Social and Economic History of Kuwait: 1913 - 1961), (Kuwait: Sharikat al-Matbu'at lil Tawzi' wa al-Nashr, 1972), p.127; al-Shamlan, From the History of Kuwait, p.117; al-Qan'ie, p.29.

But there were developing within the region counter-forces. These forces were brought to the fore in 1898 when Mubarak, half-brother of the ruling Shaikh Mohammed, assasinated Shaikh Mohammed and his brother Jarrah, seizing for himself the title of Amir. Thus, the first period of Kuwait's development was brought to an abrupt end. The significance of Mubarak's coup d'etat, recognized by Kuwaiti historians as "the beginning of a new development in Kuwaiti life and its modern history,"[83] must be examined in the broader context of regional and international forces impacting on Kuwait. Before examining the development of Kuwaiti society following Mubarak's seizure of power, the next chapter will place these events in their regional and international context.

---

[83] Husayn, p.92.

CHAPTER III

BRITISH GULF POLICY AND KUWAIT IN THE 19TH CENTURY

In his definitive history of Kuwait to 1800, Abu Hakima identified "the confused internal state and consequent lack of centralised power in Persia, Ottoman 'Iraq and Arabia"[1] as one of the main factors allowing the establishment of the Utub at Kuwait. Throughout the eighteenth century, the main external impact on Kuwait was tribal, not state. By the nineteenth century, however, this was rapidly changing, and Kuwait was increasingly drawn into the vortex of the region's international politics. The impact of this on Kuwait will be examined in terms of the growth of British imperialism in the Gulf.

Britian in the Persian Gulf

Britain's role in the Gulf was initiated in the seventeenth century through the activities of the British

---

[1] Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, P.43

East India Company. Incorporated on the last day of 1600 as the "Governor and Company of Merchants of London trading into the East Indies,"[2] between 1616 and 1617 the company established the first British Factories in Persia,[3] and by 1623 had factories in the Persian ports of Jask and Bandar Abbas.

Prior to the arrival of the British, the Portuguese were the only European nation operating in the Gulf. Having established themselves there in 1507, by the time of the arrival of the British, the Portuguese had fortified stations at Hormuz (commanding the eastern entrance into the Gulf), Bahrain, Qishm and Musqat, and enjoyed a virtual monopoly on European trade with the region.[4] From the arrival of the British there was intense rivalry between the two European powers in the Gulf.[5] The British successfully allied themselves with the Persians, who were the major power in the area at the time, and by 1622, the Portuguese were all but routed from participation in the Gulf.[6]

---

[2] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, p.10.

[3] _Ibid._, pp.15-19.

[4] Wilson, pp.110-127.

[5] _Ibid._, pp.128-142.

[6] J. B. Kelly, _Britain and the Persian Gulf, 1795-1880_ (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1968), pp.1-2, notes the mercantile motives of British entrance into the Gulf.

However, the withdrawal of the Portuguese did not leave the British East India Company unchallenged in Gulf commerce. The Dutch, already a powerful mercantile rival to the British in the east, arrived in the Gulf in 1623, and throughout the seventeenth century proved a scourge to British commerce. In consequence of Dutch activities in Persia, in 1645 the British temporarily removed their factory at Bandar Abbas to Basra. The history of British East India Company activities in the Gulf in the eighteenth century is dominated by rivalry with the Dutch, and the declining importance of trade with Persia (partly caused by Dutch success and partly by the increasing instability of Persia). In 1763, the company permanently removed its factory at Bandar Abbas to Basra, which thereafter became the principal British establishment in the Gulf.[7]

Throughout the eighteenth century, however, the company's mercantile role in India was gradually changing, and by the end of the century had assumed a distinctly political character. In consequence of this, the company's position in the Middle East, as the gateway to India, took on increasing significance. By the turn of the century, the British were approaching the area more from a political than mercantile perspective.[8]

---

[7] Wilson, pp.153-170. Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, pp.10-173, provides a much more detailed account of the affairs of the company in this period.

The strategic importance of the Middle East came to the fore from the time of Bonaparte's invasion of Egypt in 1798. The French, systematically harassing British sea-borne commerce in eastern waters from their base on the island of Mauritius and actively seeking a foothold in Persia and Oman, began raiding British commerce in the Gulf in 1799. In 1810, a British military force dispatched from India routed the French from Mauritius, bringing to an end French harassment of British commerce in the east.

More important in terms of the expansion of British policy in the Middle East, including the Gulf, were fears of French designs in the area. British diplomatic activities in both Ottoman Iraq and Persia greatly increased during the period, beginning with the establishment of a British Residency at Baghdad in 1798 and culminating in an exclusive treaty with Persia in 1809.[9] This period in fact, witnessed the initiation of British imperialism in the Middle East.

---

[8] See Kelly, pp.260-289.

[9] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, pp.169-177.

Within the Gulf in this period, Britain not only sought to exclude European powers that might threaten its growing empire in India, but also to work the area into the British division of labour. The suppression of Indian handicrafts industry and its transformation into a source of raw materials and market for British industry had already begun in 1700.[10] And by 1800, the British were seeking to secure the Gulf markets for British goods. India had been a principal trading partner of the Gulf since time immemorial, and it was the British object to substitute British goods for Indian merchandise. It was in this period that the British sent several missions to the Gulf to investigate the prospects for British commerce. An extensive report prepared by Messrs. Manesty and Jones of the Basra Residency in 1790, provided an extensive review of commerce in the region. With respect to the Port of Basra, the report noted that:[11]

> . . . although essential Advantage is known to have accrued to British Individuals from the prosecution of a rather extensive commerce with that country that little Benefit has arisen to the Hon'ble Company

---

[10] Ibid., p.52.

[11] "Report on the Commerce of Arabia . . .", Abu Hakima, History of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 2, p.25.

> from the disposal of their consignments thither, which have principally consisted of woollens, and which have seldom met either a speedy or advantageous Vend.

The report concluded with a list of recommendations for improving the East India Company's commercial position in the area.[12]

The first priority Britain took was to establish its naval power in the Gulf. Fear of growing Wahabi power in Arabia, the Wahabi capture of the port of Qatif in 1800, and by 1803 their control of the Arab coast from Qatif to the Trucial coast, and increasing tension between Britain and Turkey were the prime motivations to British naval action in the Gulf. But the pretext was piracy (which was, in fact, the effective form of war carried on by Wahabi forces in the Gulf, principally the Qawasim tribe).[13] In 1805, the first British expedition entered the Gulf and participated with the Sultan of Oman in naval action in the Gulf against the Persian port of Bandar Abbas and Qasimi ships in anchorage at Qishm. Between 1807 - 08, a British squadron was stationed in the Gulf.[14] And in 1809, the

---

[12] *Ibid*., pp.42-46.

[13] Wilson, pp.195-203; Kelly, pp.99-138.

[14] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, p.182.

British sent a major naval and military expedition to the Gulf that wiped out Arab fleets all along the Persian and Trucial coasts, and captured Ras al-Khaima, the Qasimi stronghold.[15]

Between 1811 and 1818, the British were absorbed in consolidating their hold on India. The Wahabi threat in that period was substantially diminished by the forces of Mohammed 'Ali, Pasha of Egypt, who initiated a campaign in 1811 to recapture Ottoman Red Sea districts lost to the Wahabis; and by 1818 had destroyed the Wahabi capital at Daraiya and annexed to the Ottoman empire the districts of Hasa and Najd. Egyptian forces withdrew from Arabia in 1819; and the British again turned their full attention to the area, determining to consolidate their hold on the Gulf.

To effect this, a major British military expedition left India for the Gulf in November 1819. By January 1820:[16]

> . . . a fort having been constructed and a British garrison established at Ras-al-Khaimah, the other ports of the Pirate Coast were visited, and a clean sweep was made of their military defences and of their larger war vessels. A squadron also repaired to

---

[15] Wilson, pp.204-205.

[16] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, p.198.

> Bahrain and obtained the surrender and destruction of several piratical craft which had found refuge there; and similar measures were taken at Lingeh, Mughu, 'Asalu and Kangun upon the Persian side.

The culmination of this operation was the Treaty of Peace concluded in 1820 with all the principal Arab shaikhs of the Trucial Coast and Bahrain (ten signatories in all). While the terms of the treaty[17] prohibited acts of piracy in the Gulf and conferred upon the British the right to punish such acts, and introduced a system of ship registration, the effective result of the treaty was to pacify the petty principalities of the eastern half of the Arab littoral and bring the coast under the complete domain of British hegemony. According to Philip Ireland, the treaty marked the "beginnings of the political supremacy of Great Britain over the Arabs on the Gulf."[18] Its commercial impact was to enhance British commerce by fully protecting it against piracy, while leaving the commerce carried on Arab vessels fully at risk. Furthermore, the registration

---

[17] For the text of the treaty see C. U. Aitchison, Collection of Treaties, Engagements and Sanads Relating to India and Neighbouring Countries, Vol. 12 (Calcutta: 1909), pp.172-176.

[18] Iraq: A Study in Political Development (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1938), p.33.

7

system gave Britain an effective way of monitoring all sea traffic on the Gulf. The vessels of signatories to the treaty had to carry papers of "Register and Clearance," to be produced on demand by British vessels they met. The papers were to include such vital information as the point of departure of the vessel, its destination, its arms, its capacity, and the number of crew.

While the treaty brought the eastern entrances of the Gulf and the ports of Muscat and Manama under effective British control (a control that continued to tighten throughout the century), it still left the Persian and Ottoman areas, and the most lucrative ports of entry to their markets (Basra and Bushire) outside their domination. Ottoman Iraq and Persia represented state powers as opposed to the petty tribes brought under British dominion by the treaty, and theypossessed the real wealth to be expropriated from the area and the key areas of imperialist competition. The imperialist penetration of Ottoman Iraq and Persia, however, presented a far more complex matter than the subjugation of some petty tribal principalities, and the Gulf represented only one avenue of this penetration. Furthermore, so long as these powers were not under British control, Britain's role in the Gulf was also vulnerable. These fears were manifest in Anglo-Russian rivalry in Iraq and Persia that began about 1830 and was the principal theme of British policy in the area for the remainder of the century. By the end of the century, German rivalry in the Gulf and the Ottoman Empire expanded the context of imperialist competition.[19] Lord Curzon, Viceroy of India from 1899 to 1905 (and one of the main architects of British policy in the Middle East), clearly resounded the imperialist tenet when he observed that the lands of the Middle East "are the pieces on a chessboard upon which is being played out a game for the dominion of the world."[20] Zaki Saleh summarized the thrust of British imperialism in Iraq from 1830 onward accordingly:[21]

> To dominate the region was highly desirable for the British, but to be in a position to thwart any possible Russian thrust in that direction seemed of absolute necessity for them. Their priority in the Ottaman [sic] Empire, their interests in the Persian Gulf, and, above all, the very existence of their Indian Empire, would be gravely menaced, if Russia were allowed

---

[19] For an excellent study of British policy in the Gulf between 1894 and 1914, see Briton C. Busch, Britain and the Persian Gulf, 1894-1914 (Berkeley: University of California, 1967).

[20] Persia and the Persian Question, Vol. 1, pp.4-5.

[21] Mesopotamia (Iraq), 1600-1914: A Study in British Foreign Affairs (Baghdad: al-Ma'aref Press, 1957), p.170. See also Ravinder Kumar, India and the Persian Gulf Region, 1858-1907: A Study in British Imperial Policy (New York: Asia Publishing House, 1965) for a comprehensive study of the relationship between Britain's Indian empire and Gulf policy.

> to gain a foothold on the banks of the two rivers. This conception, originating with the British about the year 1830, and developing during the ensuing four decades, was firmly established by the year 1878.

Reviewing the means of British penetration of Iraq over these decades, Saleh concluded:[22]

> Through these activities and attendant circumstances, Mesopotamia was virtually turned into a British sphere of influence, with the usually defined status of such a sphere: interests, privileges, and priority, enjoyed by a certain power in a so-called backward region.

Britain and Kuwait

It is in this larger context of British imperialism in the Middle East in general, and the Gulf in particular, that Britain's relationship to Kuwait must be placed. In its beginnings, Kuwait was an insignificant, relatively peaceful port that the British regarded as a dependency of Basra.[23] Khaz'al observed that "despite the expiration of 50 years since the establishment of Kuwait, relations between the British East India Company and Amir Sabah I did not materialize."[24]

---

[22] Ibid.

[23] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1002.

[24] Khaz'al, Vol. 1, p.55.

From the beginning, it appears that Kuwait paid nominal recognition to Ottoman authority in Iraq, though in fact it pursued an independent policy. In 1789, for example, the resident of the British East India Company at Basra communicated to the Shaikh of Kuwait the Pasha of Baghdad's threat to "proceed on an Expedition against" Kuwait unless asylum was denied to political expatriates seeking refuge in Kuwait.[25] Shaikh Abdullah replied that "the Town of Grain [Kuwait] belongs to the Bacha, the Inhabitants of it are his Servants," and firmly denied the request.[26] No expedition was ever carried out, and the issue seems not to have caused more than momentary irritation. Nevertheless, the incident reflects the basic autonomy of Kuwait.

British records at the time generally identified Kuwait as a dependency of Basra.[27] However, Kuwait's close relationship to Basra was based upon commercial, not political ties. Basra was Kuwait's main trading partner, even after the period of Persian occupation of Basra and the subsequent rise of Kuwait's maritime power.

---

[25] The political expatriates were Shaikh Thuwaini and Mustafa Agha who cooperated in an abortive attempt to wrest Basra from Suleiman Pasha. See Stephen Hemsley Longrigg, Four Centuries of Modern Iraq (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1925), pp.204-206.

[26] The complete texts of these letters are reproduced in Abu Hakima, History of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 2, pp.19-20.

[27] See, for example, Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1002; Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, 1750-1800, p.85.

During this early period, in fact, Ottoman authorities in Iraq had no Gulf policy per se and were not interested in asserting effective control over Kuwait. They were hard-pressed to maintain control over the tribes of Iraq and embroiled in continuous competition and intermittent wars with Persia. So long as Kuwait gave nominal recognition to Ottoman authority, then, and did not become allied to hostile powers, Kuwait was in fact not threatened by interference in its internal affairs.

Kuwait's first recorded contact with the British occurred in 1775 when Basra was under siege by the Persians. At that time, the British transferred to Kuwait the dispatch of their Gulf to Aleppo mail. "This arrangement was continued during the Persian occupation of Basra until 1779."[28] During this period, as pointed out earlier, the bulk of caravan trade to Baghdad and Aleppo was transferred from Basra to Kuwait, and this included the merchandise of the British East India Company coming from Bombay. Furthermore, there was consideration among the company's directors of establishing a factory at Kuwait. However, because of fear the Persians would take possession of Kuwait, this was dropped.[29] Nevertheless, the excellent harbour of Kuwait and the advantages of shipping from there were noted.[30]

---

[28] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1002.

From that time, at least, members of the British Factory at Basra appear to have maintained very friendly relations with the ruler of Kuwait and, as was the company policy in the area, to have extended presents to the Shaikh from time to time "for the security of the Company's Dispatches, of the English Trade, and of English Travellers passing between Bussora, Aleppo and Baghdat. Timely Presents are often of great Use in preserving this good Understanding."[31] Abu Hakima observed that the friendship was natural "because of the benefit to both. For some time past the Company had depended on Kuwait for her dispatches. The Shaikh derived substantial benefit from the traffic."[32]

In 1793, when difficulties arose between the Pasha of Baghdad and British Factory officials at Basra, the factory was removed to Kuwait, where it remained until August 1795.[33] This, for the period, renewed Kuwait as a center for caravan traffic as British goods were dispatched from Kuwait instead of Basra. And by that period, as observed earlier, Kuwait was already well established in the carrying trade of the Gulf. Also, it reflects the company's recognition of Kuwait's independent status. According to Lorimer:[34]

---

[29] Abu Hakima, History of Eastern Arabia, pp.97-99.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Latouche and Manesty, November 6, 1784, in Abu Hakima, History of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 2, p.18.

[32] History of Eastern Arabia, 1750-1800, p.123.

> From the selection of Kuwait as a place of retreat from the Turks, it is clear that, whatever may have been the case in 1775, it was not in any real sense a Turkish dependency in 1793 . . . . For the protection of the British Factory at Kuwait a small cruiser was kept anchored in the bay, and a guard of sepoys under a native officer was stationed on shore.

Kuwait was under attack by the Wahabis during this period, and Lorimer suggests that the British Factors (in spite of an official position of neutrality) may have employed two guns from the British cruiser and the sepoy guard to help Kuwait repel one serious attack.[35] Whether, in fact, British forces helped at this time or not, however, it is clear that within the next several years, the Wahabis had become a power on the coast, and a menace to British commercial activity. It is reported in Arabic sources[36] that in 1805 the British approached Shaikh Abdullah, proposing to protect the shaikhdom from desert attacks; the shaikh refused. And, again in 1807, the British proposed a treaty of friendship with Kuwait, but again, Abdullah refused. Although there is no mention of this in Lorimer, nevertheless the report is consistent with British interests at the time.

---

[33] For details, see Kelly, pp.54-55.

[34] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1004.

[35] *Ibid.*, p.1005.

Britain's interest in Kuwait at this time was dictated by the tiny shaikhdom's strategic location. First of all, it wanted to keep the Wahabis (or any other power for that matter) from extending their power on the coast to the western reaches of the Gulf. As pointed out earlier, the Wahabis were threatening Kuwait, but never launched a serious attack on the port, no doubt from the fear of large-scale Ottoman and British reprisal and occupation of the port. Neither the Ottomans nor the British would have allowed the establishment of a Wahabi stronghold so close to Basra.

Second, Kuwait's proximity to Basra provided the British with a convenient retreat from Basra, as occurred in 1775 and 1793, and again in 1821-22.[37] In the two latter instances, Britain's withdrawal from Basra was occasioned by problems with the Pasha of Baghdad. Kuwait offered the British a convenient leverage against the authorities of Ottoman Iraq by threatening to withdraw the center of their commercial activities from Basra.[38]

---

[36] Khaz'al, p.70; Guide to Kuwait, p.57.

From Kuwait's perspective, on the other hand, the occasional British withdrawals to its port provided brief booms to commerce. But Kuwait could not afford to incur the enmity of either the Ottoman Government of Iraq or the Wahabis by forming an alliance with Britain. While the trade the British occasionally drew to Kuwait was lucrative, its commerce with both Basra and Central Arabia was essential; and throughout the turmoil in both its neighbouring regions, Kuwait on the whole followed a judiciously neutral position, attempting to keep lines of communication open on all sides.

Throughout the nineteenth century, in fact, until Mubarak took power in 1896, the policy of alliance with Ottoman Iraq and conciliation towards all factions marked the external relations of Kuwait. During these years, the shaikhdom became a safe refuge for political expatriates from the area deposed in internal power struggles. The chief of the Bani Ka'ab sought refuge in Kuwait twice (Shaikh Thamir, 1839 and 1841); ex-shaikhs of Bahrain (Abdullah, 1844; Mohammed, 1869); and expatriates from power struggles among the Wahabis (Abdullah bin-Thanaiyin, 1841; and Khalid, de facto Wahabi Amir, in the same year deposed when Abdullah bin-Thanaiyin returned and gained the upper hand).

---

[37] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1008.

[38] For a detailed account of the British disagreement with the Pasha of Baghdad, see Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1325-1329. For the issue detailed from the perspective of Iraqi history, see Saleh, pp.132-134.

During this period, however, the British were strengthening their control over the Gulf. Fearing Russian penetration of Ottoman Iraq on the one hand, and Mohammed Ali's ambitions in the Gulf on the other, in 1839 the British considered the suitability of Kuwait as a naval and military station. But their representations in Kuwait were rebuffed by the Shaikh.[39] In 1841, Kuwait temporarily joined the Trucial peace accord with Britain. However, this lapped after one year and was not renewed.[40] In 1863 and 1865, Colonel

---

[39] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1009-1010. Also see Kelly, pp.337-338.

[40] Kelly, p.369 n., notes that Kuwait's joining the system was "more by accident than by design."

Pelly, British Resident in the Gulf, visited Kuwait. Remarking on this visit, Lorimer observed:[41]

> The possible future of Kuwait as a commercial port and as a meeting place of sea-borne and other trade, together with its suitability in certain circumstances for the site of a British telegraph station or coast depot, were clearly realized by Colonel Pelly, who even remarked, with extraordinary prescience, that Khor 'Abdullah might hereafter become the chief line of approach by steamer to the commercial capital of Turkish 'Irāq, and that its head might one day be connected by a railway with the Mediterranean.

Throughout these attempts, Kuwait remained very friendly with the British, but firmly resisted British efforts at penetration. Kuwait's commercial and political life throughout the nineteenth century drew increasingly closer to Basra, and the Shaikhs of Kuwait looked to the Ottoman authorities in Iraq as their natural allies if not protectors. The alliance took two principal forms. First was Kuwait's military assistance to Basra. In 1827, Shaikh Jabir put Kuwait's naval fleet under the service of the Mutasalim (Deputy Governor) of Basra when the port was under attack by the Bani Ka'ab Arabs; in 1836, Kuwait assisted Ottoman forces in quelling an uprising in Zubair; in 1837, it assisted the Ottoman assault against the Persian port of Muhammareh; and in

---

[41] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1012.

1845, Kuwait helped defend Basra.[42] The second form was the acquisition by the Sabah family of considerable landholdings in Ottoman territory. During this period, the Sabah family had acquired estates of date palm groves in Fao and Sufiyeh. These groves were acquired primarily as gifts for services rendered by the Sabah family.[43] By the end of the Shaikh Jabir's reign in 1859, these date groves constituted the Sabah family's principal source of income.[44]

If Britain could not bring Kuwait under direct protection, then it was in its interests to preserve the autonomy of the shaikhdom vis-a-vis the Ottoman Empire.[45] British efforts to forestall the development of a real political tie between Kuwait and the Ottoman Empire failed, however. Lorimer reported that Shaikh Abdullah[46]

---

[42] Mustapha 'Abd al-Qadir al-Najjar, al-Tarikh al-Siyasi li'Ilaqat al-Iraq al-Dawliyah bi al-Khalij al-'Arabi (The Political History of Iraqi International Relations with the States of the Arab Gulf), (Basra: Basra University Press, 1975), pp.46-47.

[43] Ibid.

[44] In 1899, the revenues of the Fao estates alone were estimated at 6,000 pounds annually. Government of India to Lord G. Hamilton, February 12, 1899, Foreign Office Confidential Print: Correspondence Respecting Affairs at Koweit, 1896-1905, first printed for Foreign Office use only in 1900, and only recently made available to the public under the title, The Affairs of Kuwait, 1896-1904, 2 vols., ed. Robin Bidwell (London: Frank Cass and Co., 1971), Vol. 1, pt. 1, pp.39-40.

[45] See Abdul 'Aziz Suleiman Nawar, Tarikh al-'Iraqi al-Hadith (The History of Modern Iraq), (Cairo: Dar al-Katab al-'Arabi, 1968), pp.233-236, who examines British efforts to forestall developing ties between Ottoman Iraq and Kuwait.

> . . . appears to have maintained very close relations with the Turks, and to have been an obedient and even enthusiastic instrument of Turkish policy. In 1870 or 1871 he became the medium of overtures from 'Abdullah-bin-Faisal, the displaced Wahhabi Amir, for the assistance of the Turks. In 1870 he supplied sea transport, to the amount of about 300 native vessels, for the Turkish forces sent to conquer Hasa; he accompanied the expedition in person; and it was chiefly through his agency that the Shaikh of Dohah in Qatar was persuaded to accept the Turkish flag.

In 1871, Shaikh Abdullah accepted the Turkish title of Qaim-Maqam (sub-governor) and Kuwait became an administrative unit of the Ottoman Empire.[47] There appeared no further contact between Kuwait and British authorities, and in 1893 the British Ambassador to Istanbul officially acknowledged Ottoman sovereighty along the coast from Basra to Qatif, including Kuwait.[48] However, by 1896 this was rapidly changing in consequence of Mubarak's coup d'etat.

---

[46] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1014.

[47] al-Najjar, p.54.

[48] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1017.

Britain and Mubarak

From the time of Persia's occupation of Basra in 1775, the dominant financial-commercial class in Kuwait was from Basra. These merchants, comprising Indian, Persian and Ottoman elements, had migrated to Kuwait principally from Basra in the late eighteenth century, and had financed the development of Kuwait's merchant fleet. Representing regional rather than local financial and commercial interests, these merchants had, particularly from the middle of the century, promoted the strong political ties between Kuwait and Ottoman Iraq. A shift in long distance trade routes was an important factor for this.

The long-distance trade between India and Europe was essentially monopolized by Britain by the 1820's. By the 1830's, however, the British changed the route for conveyance of Indian goods to Europe from the Persian Gulf to the Red Sea.[49] The Basra to Aleppo desert post was completely abandoned in 1833, but was reestablished in 1843 or 1844 as a camel post between Baghdad and Beirut.[50] This shift of long-distance trade routes diminished both the maritime and caravan traffic activity in the Gulf region. The Ottoman markets of Europe and the Middle East were then the major centers of demand for commerce from the east, and Basra the principal port. Hence, the Ottoman port became the focus of Gulf commerce.

---

[49] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 2, p.2440.

[50] *Ibid*.

However, by 1862, because of the development of the steam engine, the Persian Gulf route again interested the British. In that year, the British India Steam Navigation Company introduced a six-weekly steam service between Karachi and Basra. By 1874, it was increased to a weekly service and stopped for cargo transfers at the major ports of the Gulf. In the same period, steam service was introduced on the Tigris.[51] The result of the introduction of steam vessels was the dislocation of the regional carrying trade. The native sailing craft of the region were no match in terms of speed or cargo capacity for the British steamers. At the same time, the British steamers carried British goods, chopping off the region's nascent industries. Hence, one of the main industries of the Gulf went into decline as British steamers began to monopolize the carrying trade in the Gulf, and further development of the region's productive forces was suppressed by British products.

These changing circumstances weakened the power of Kuwait's financial-commercial class at a time the

---

[51] *Ibid*.

Ottoman Empire was attempting to strengthen its position in the Gulf. The Utbi merchants of Kuwait--primarily petty merchants and pearl merchants--saw greater opportunity in an alliance with the British than the Ottomans. There is no direct evidence that the British cultivated this proposition, save from inference from succeeding events. Khaz'al, however, reports that as early as 1856, the British had proposed to the Kuwaitis that in exchange for protective rights over Kuwait, Kuwait's trade with Basra could be completely substituted by trade with ports under British hegemony.[52] Although the Shaikh refused the proposition, by the end of the century, it must have appeared an inviting alternative to the petty and pearl merchants of Kuwait.[53]

The basis of the inference, however, rests on three facts. First, this transference of trade to ports under British hegemony is what actually occurred in the twentieth century, as will be discussed in the next chapter. Second, the Utbi merchants of Kuwait readily accepted Mubarak's coup d'etat, and Mubarak's first steps were to impose taxation on imports from Basra and other Turkish ports.[54] Finally, and most significantly, was the British connection in Mubarak's coup.

---

[52] Khaz'al, pp.119-120.

[53] Arab reaction against Ottoman hegemony of the Arab world was already a growing force in the Middle East and by the turn of the century was taking the shape of a distinct nationalist movement. Throughout the Arab East, the British were cultivating reaction against Ottoman domination to further their own imperialist goals. It is, then, not without historic precedent that a British role in turning the Utbi merchants of Kuwait into a self-conscious class reacting against Ottoman commercial interests may be inferred. The classic historical examination of the emergence of Arab nationalism is George Antonius, The Arab Awakening (New York: 1939).

While the British officially denied any complicity in Mubarak's coup, nevertheless, according to an official memorandum by the legal adviser to the British Embassy in Istanbul, prior to the coup Mubarak spent one month in Bushire with the British Resident in the Gulf, F. A. Wilson (a point not denied by Wilson).[55] At the time of the assassination, Yusuf ibn Abdullah al-Ibrahim, a wealthy merchant of Iraqi origin who was Shaikh Mohammed's confidant and adviser, fled Kuwait to seek Turkish assistance in removing the usurper. Shortly afterward, the sons of Mohammed and Jarrah joined al-Ibrahim in Basra. There they petitioned Ottoman authorities in Basra, Baghdad and Istanbul, for support against Mubarak. The Government in Istanbul, however, suspicious of British intentions in Kuwait, "unwilling, under the present circumstances, to cause a new complication to arise [in Anglo-Ottoman affairs], decided to ignore the case of the assassination, and intends to grant to Monbarec [sic] the usual investiture, and orders to this effect have been dispatched to the Governor-General of Bussorah, instructing him to avoid all shedding of blood."[56]

---

[54] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1024-1025.

[55] Memorandum by Mr. Stavrides, June 30, 1896, The Affairs of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 1, pp.1-2.

From the correspondence that followed between various British officials concerned with the affair--the Prime Minister, Secretary of State, Government of India, Embassy of Istanbul, British Resident in the Gulf, and officials in Basra, Arabia, etc.[57] --there was considerable disagreement between the Foreign Office and the Government of India as to the British role and intent vis-a-vis Kuwait.[58] Two things are clear, however. First the Foreign Office did not want to incur a direct confrontation with the Ottoman Government over Kuwait, if avoidable, so gave at least nominal recognition to Turkish interests (though they denied Ottoman suzerainty) in Kuwait.[59] And second, the Government of India was prepared to act if in fact Ottoman authorities took action against Mubarak. A British man-of-war, in fact, visited Kuwait in July 1896, but found no disturbances there as a result of the recent coup. The commander reported:[60]

---

[56] Ibid., p.2.

[57] This correspondence, covering the period from July 1896 to January 1899, is compiled in The Affairs of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 1, pp.1-36.

[58] The disagreement between the Home Office and the India Office over Gulf affairs was one of the principal themes of Busch's study, Britain and the Persian Gulf, 1894-1914. After an intensive examination of this era, he concluded that "the development of the British Gulf position was not accomplished without friction--sometimes severe friction--between Home and Indian authorities. In this controversy, India took a forward line in most

> Koweit is nominally an independent Arab territory, but in reality the Turks exercise great influence over it, more especially since the new Chief acceded to power, he finds it necessary to play into their hands. I paid him a visit, but he would not come off to the ship; I also noticed that he flew the Turkish flag and taxed him with it, but could not get any satisfactory answer from him.

---

instances, occasionally even initiating policy without Home approval, at least until 1905." (p.387) It is not without some precedent, then, to suggest that Colonel Wilson may have taken considerable initiative in encouraging Mubarak's coup, and that his actions would have been concealed in the official correspondence.

[59] Government of India to Hamilton, February 24, 1897, The Affairs of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 1, p.3; and Marquees of Salisbury to Currie, July 17, 1897, Ibid., p.12.

[60] Baker to Drummond, August 4, 1896, Ibid., pp.16-17.

However, Ottoman, particularly Iraqi, opposition to Mubarak became manifest in the next several months. By early 1897, a concerted action against Mubarak appeared imminent. And in May 1897, the British sent a man-of-war to Basra, no doubt to forestall an overt attack, but under the pretext of piracy.[61] And in November of that year, on rumour that a Turkish gunboat was en route to attack Kuwait, the British dispatched a gunboat there.[62]

In the meantime, there was a concerted effort to find a legitimate reason for Britain to establish a protectorate over Kuwait. Piracy and Russian intervention were proposed during this period as pretexts to establish de jure the already de facto protectorate without provoking an international accusation of complicity in Mubarak's coup. The case of piracy was already in preparation when Mubarak pulled his coup. And the British continued to cultivate it throughout 1897. However, in November 1897, the Marquis of Salisbury, Brit~~ish Prime~~ Minister, notified the Foreign Office that repression of piracy did not provide sufficient ground for placing Kuwait under British protection.[63] Thereafter, the piracy case was dropped, and Russian "designs" on Kuwait raised.[64] However, this also failed to prove a sufficiently pressing problem to justify establishment of the protectorate. Essentially killing the issue, on February 18, 1898, Admiral Beaumont, Director of Naval Intelligence, wrote to the Foreign Office:[65]

---

[61] Moubray to Drummond, July 7, 1897, Ibid., pp.15-16.

[62] Moubray to Meade, November 7, 1897, and Meade to Government of India, November 12, 1897, Ibid., p.23.

> The anchorage off the town of Koweit is a good one and could well be made into a coaling station, but it is on the way to nowhere, and I cannot conceive why the Russians should desire to have it . . . . It seems to me, therefore, that unless there is a probability of Russia being some day established on the shores of the Persian Gulf, the rumours of her desiring to have Koweit as a coaling station cannot have any military significance or importance.

---

[63] Foreign Office to India Office, November 25, 1897, Ibid., p.22.

[64] Lock to Government of India, December 22, 1897, Ibid., pp.24-26, first raises this issue, and it is the predominant theme of correspondence through March, 1898, pp.26-28. It remained an issue of British policy in the Gulf throughout the early 20th century. However, there was never real danger of Russian competition to British hegemony in the Gulf in this period, as pointed out by T. Hungerford Holdich, The Indian Borderland, 1880-1900 (London: Methuen, 1901), pp.223-224. The issue, then, appears more a rationale for turning the Gulf into a private British lake than a cause of it, the raison d'etre of which was the growth of Russian influence in Persia and the Ottoman Empire.

[65] Ibid., pp.27-28.

Throughout this entire period, Mubarak was pressing the British to formally extend protectorate status to Kuwait. The petitions of the sons of the assassinated shaikhs and other protestations from Iraq over Mubarak's coup had been effective, and by September 1898, the Sublime Porte of the Ottoman Empire had sanctioned the appointment of a commission to investigate the complaints against Mubarak. Ottoman intervention in Kuwait appeared imminent, and Mubarak pressed the matter of protection more vigorously. On December 22, 1898, the British Ambassador to Istanbul wrote to the Prime Minister:[66]

> Acts of piracy and of regular Traffic in Slaves would justify the interference of the Indian Government and afford ground for coming to a direct and special arrangement with the Sheikh, which need not necessarily be made public. In course of time this arrangement might be shaped into a more effective form which would serve all practical purposes and give the Indian Government prior lien upon Koweit.
>
> Though strongly in favour of the maintenance of British supremacy in the Persian Gulf, I am of opinion that it will be advisable to proceed cautiously and as quietly as possible in regard to the establishment of a British Protectorate over Koweit. Any formal declaration to this effect at the present moment would be considered little short of a hostile act by Turkey, and in any case it would be sure to produce very serious diplomatic complications, not only with this Government, but probably also with Russia.

---

[66] Ibid., pp.30-31.

In January 1899, a secret agreement between Shaikh Mubarak and Britain was concluded.[67] By the agreement, Mubarak bound himself, his heirs and his successors[68]

> . . . not to receive the Agent or Represenative of any Power or Government at Koweit, or at any other place within the limits of his territory, without the previous sanction of the British Government; and further binds himself, his heirs and successors not to cede, sell, lease, mortgage, or give for occupation or for any other purpose any portion of his territory to the Government or subjects of any other Power without the previous consent of Her Majesty's Government for these purposes. This engagement also to extend to any portion of the territory of the said Sheikh Mubarak, which may now be in the possession of the subjects of any other Government.

The agreement affixed no obligations upon Britain. Mubarak insisted upon a definite promise of protection.[69] Therefore, in an accompanying letter, Colonel Meade, British Political Resident in the Gulf, assured Mubarak "of the good offices of the British Government towards you, your heirs and successors as long as you . . . . scrupulously and faithfully observe the conditions of the said bond."[70] The letter also agreed to pay him Rs. 15,000 (1,000 pounds) and added: "A most important condition of the execution of this agreement is that it is to be kept absolutely secret, and not divulged or made public in any way without the previous consent of the British Government."[71]

---

[67] See Meade's report to Government of India, January 30, 1899, on conclusion of the agreement, The Affairs of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 1, pp.47-50.

[68] Complete text of Agreement available in Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1048-1049.

[69] Government of India to Hamilton, February 12, 1899, The Affairs of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 1, pp.39-40.

Mubarak's two brothers were present to attest the treaty, but refused to sign the agreement. They wanted British assurances to protect family landholdings to Fao which they feared would be confiscated by Ottoman authorities. To forestall a split between Mubarak and his brothers, and guarantee their silence on the secret agreement, in February the Foreign Office approved this stipulation, stating that "Her Majesty's Government will do what they can to protect the family estates of the Sheikhs of Koweit at Fao."[72]

---

[70] Complete text of letter available in Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1049-1050.

[71] Ibid.

[72] Foreign Office to India Office, February 14, 1899, The Affairs of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pt. 1, p.41.

Ottoman authorities knew of the British resident's visit to Kuwait,[73] and made some feeble efforts over the next several years to assert Ottoman suzerainty over Kuwait. These efforts were resisted with the aid of the British who provided a frequent show of naval power at Kuwait to ward off potential attacks. By 1902, British control over Kuwait was a recognized fact in both Istanbul and other European capitals, and "Anglo-Kuwait relations forged ahead with the usual secrecy and conformity to British design."[74]

Through the agreement, Mubarak became a tool of British policy vis-a-vis the Ottoman Empire and in Central Arabia. By denying Germany a terminus in Kuwait for the Berlin to Baghdad railway project, first proposed in 1899 (a proposal supported by the Ottoman Sultan), Kuwait helped to forestall the penetration of Germany into the area.[75]

---

[73] Wratislaw to Melvill, February 2, 1899, Ibid., p.53.

[74] Saleh, p.279. The diplomatic history of this period actually reflects the complex game of international chess that was played among the powers of the period. For an excellent account of British diplomacy and strategy in establishing its de facto protectorate over Kuwait without precipitating confrontation, see Busch, Chapter 7, pp.187-234.

[75] Busch, pp.187-234.

In Central Arabia, Mubarak provided a link for the British with 'Abd al-'Aziz al-Sa'ud, the Wahabi Amir. With the conquest of Riyadh (the Wahabi capital) by Ibn Rashid in 1892, Wahabi power in Central Arabia appeared completely broken.[76] In 1893, 'Abd al-Rahman ibn Sa'ud, the defeated Wahabi Amir, took refuge in Kuwait with his family. 'Abd al-'Aziz al-Sa'ud was then a young boy and grew to maturity in Kuwait under the personal patronage of Shaikh Mubarak, to whom, notes Dickson, "is due the credit for the political training and pro-British leaning of 'Abdul 'Aziz Al Sa'ud, the future ruler of Sa'udi Arabia."[77]

With his flank protected by Britain from Turkish attack, in December 1900, Mubarak led a large expedition into Central Arabia against the forces of Ibn Rashid. Ibn Rashid, allied to the Ottoman Empire, had been harrying the bedouin adherents of Kuwait, and Kuwait was losing support among the tribesmen.[78]

---

[76] See Winder, Saudi Arabia in the Nineteenth Century for a history of the rise and decline of Saudi power in Central Arabia in the nineteenth century.

[77] Kuwait and Her Neighbours, p.137.

[78] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, p.1028.

Mubarak wished to re-establish Sa'udi power in Central Arabia under his patronage, and both diminish Ottoman influence there and re-establish the prestige of Sabah among the tribes. At first, the expedition was a substantial success, but in March 1901, Mubarak's forces lost a major battle and had to hastily retreat from Najd. Britain subsequently had to protect Mubarak not only from more vigorous Ottoman efforts to absorb Kuwait, but also from threats of attack by Ibn Rashid.[79]

However, Mubarak's incursion into Central Arabia had paved the way for the return of Sa'ud. In January 1902, 'Abd al-'Aziz al-Sa'ud recovered Riyadh. With this recovery, Wahabi power in Central Arabia quickly began to grow as tribes deserted the ranks of Ibn Rashid in favour of Sa'udi allegiance. By 1904, even Ottoman authorities acknowledged Sa'udi control of Southern Najd and came to terms with Ibn Sa'ud.[80]

There is no direct evidence of a British connection with Mubarak's expedition into Central Arabia and the re-establishment of Sa'ud. Official British correspondence in the period reflects some

---

[79] *Ibid.*, pp.1028-1036.

[80] *Ibid.*, pp.1148-1149.

Foreign Office consternation over Mubarak's aggressive policy in the desert. But this arose from the fear that it would prompt an Ottoman attack on Kuwait and force the open declaration of a Kuwait protectorate.[81] Britain was bogged down in the Boer War in this period and the Foreign Office wished to avoid the international complications that such a declaration would precipitate.[82]

Nevertheless, Britain's international interests were consistent with seeing Ottoman influence in the Gulf and Central Arabia diminished, while maintaining the appearance of empire. The Ottoman Empire was already decaying, and European competition for carving out spheres of influence from the crumbling empire had begun. With the Treaty of San Stefano signed in 1878 ending the Russo-Turkish war, Russia had severed the Balkan provinces from the Ottoman Empire; and Britain, fearing the Empire's complete collapse in the face of European, especially Russian, competition for spheres of influence, sought to shore up the Ottoman Empire in its Asian provinces while establishing its own sphere there. In June 1878, Britain concluded an agreement with Turkey to defend the Asiatic dominions (subject to certain conditions) and in return received possession of the island of Cyrpus.[83] In 1882 Britain occupied Egypt.

---

[81] This correspondence is available in The Affairs of Kuwait, Vol. 1, pts. 2 and 3.

[82] Busch, p.202.

It is within the context of imperialist competition in the period, then, that British concerns with Central Arabia must be placed. Russia was making advances in Persia, Afghanistan and the Ottoman Empire. Germany, still Britain's logical ally in case of war, was nevertheless rapidly increasing its trade in the Middle East, and had acquired considerable influence in the Istanbul palace, as the Sultan's support for the Berlin to Baghdad railway project indicated. Central Arabia, as the great buffer wasteland between a British occupied Egypt and India, and the sea routes that connected them (as well as a growing empire in East Africa), was a virtual power vacuum. Britain's connection with Mubarak provided the logical avenue of penetration then available.

The availability of arms was one of the single most significant determinants of power in Central Arabian politics at the time. Modern arms held the potential of changing the balance of power in the Peninsula, and it is not merely speculative to suggest that these arms were made available to Saudi forces through Kuwait and similarly denied to Ibn Rashid's forces. Britain had been attempting to control the access of European arms into the Gulf at least since 1881.[84] Through the Gulf, modern arms and ammunitions, mostly of British manufacture, were not only being supplied to the markets of the area but were also reaching Afghanistan and the northwestern frontier of India. According to Lorimer:[85]

---

[83] L. S. Stavrianos, The Balkans since 1453 (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1965, pp.408-411

> In 1895-96 the estimated number of rifles imported at Masqat was only 4,350, in 1896-97 it was 20,000; and in 1897 no less than 30,000 rufles were believed to have been landed at Bushehr. All the weapons brought to the Gulf were now breech-loaders; and in Southern Persia, in particular, nearly the whole male adult population were armed with weapons of precision and made free use of them. It was ascertained that in 1896 the proportion of arms and ammunition entering the Gulf and absorbed by Persia was about three-fifths of the whole, while about a quarter was taken by countries under Turkish domination and the remainder was disposed of in Arab states and principalities. The great majority of the imports were of British manufacture.

In attempting to control the arms flow, Britain made formal agreements with Persia, the Sultanate of Oman and Bahrain between 1897 and 1898, giving Britain the right to conduct search and seizure operations on merchant vessels.[86] Kuwait was a principal supply center of arms for Central Arabia, and in 1900, under British advice, Mubarak nominally agreed to its prohibition.[87] Manipulation of arms supply provided an important method of influencing events in Central Arabia, and Britain's interests and ability in this regard cannot be overlooked. Sa'udi arms came from Kuwait and were a significant factor in the return of Sa'udi power in Central Arabia.

---

[84] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1A, p.285.

[85] *Ibid.*, p.316.

Conclusion

Mubarak's agreement with Britain marks the point of Kuwait's integration into British relations of production. Unlike many other nations, Kuwait's integration into this system did not emerge from a commercial, but from a distinctly political basis. Nevertheless, as a result, Kuwait became part of an emerging world division of labour, and the impact of this upon Kuwait's internal development for the remainder of the pre-oil period shall be the subject of the next chapter.

---

[86] *Ibid*., pp.316-317.

[87] *Ibid*., p.390.

CHAPTER IV

THE UNDERDEVELOPMENT OF KUWAIT

The steady development of Kuwait throughout the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries from a nomadic settlement at the edge of the desert to a mercantile community at the western edge of the Arab Gulf was examined in Chapter II in terms of the transformation of the mode of production from a primarily nomadic to a primarily mercantile mode, and the steady development of productive forces in the mercantile mode. This progress in the transformation and development of Kuwait's mercantile mode of production was accompanied throughout the nineteenth century by the increasing ties of Kuwait with Ottoman Iraq.

The basic autonomy that marked the development of Kuwait's mercantile mode of production--the free play of productive and political forces that contributed to the rapid development of Kuwait--however, was fundamentally curtailed by Britain's penetration of Kuwait at the end of the nineteenth century. This chapter will examine how Kuwait's peripheral relationship with Britain as an object of the Empire's Gulf policy affected the development of Kuwait in the first half of the twentieth century.

Kuwait Under Mubarak

The subordination of Kuwait to British Gulf policy that was initiated with Mubarak's coup d'etat in 1896 marked the transformation of the relations of production within Kuwait, which in turn facilitated the integration of Kuwait into the capitalist system of production. It is in the period of Mubarak's reign that the dialectical process of transformation-integration was essentially completed.

A main feature of this was the transformation of the basis of Sabah authority from a tribally mediated form of community consensus to an externally mediated basis of power. By alienating to the British Kuwait's autonomy in foreign relations, Mubarak, with British support, expropriated for Britain control over the internal relations of production. Backed by the British, then, Mubarak transformed himself from a community leader into an autocratic ruler, in effect transforming the Sabah house into a centralized power structure in the society.[1]

One of the first symbols of this power was Mubarak's ability to arbitrarily levy taxes. Prior to

---

[1] See Khaldoun H. al-Naqeeb, Changing Patterns of Social Stratification in the Middle East: Kuwait (1950-1970) as a Case Study (Ph.D. Dissertation, The University of Texas at Austin, 1976), pp.124-125.

Mubarak, customs duties imposed on certain goods were a voluntary contribution of the merchants to the maintenance of the Sabah house.[2] Khaz'al reports:[3]

> But when Mubarak ruled Kuwait . . . he established a regular customs office in 1899 and imposed a five percent tax on all goods coming to Kuwait by land or sea. This increased gradually until it reached ten percent on some goods. He also imposed a real estate tax which required the payment of one-third the total value of a house sold in Kuwait.

Assessing Mubarak's reign, al-Rushaid concluded:[4]

> Mubarak was a tyrant, stubborn and unjust. He was an absolute ruler who loved the accumulation of wealth and was always seeking ways to increase his wealth. He assessed high fines against law-breakers; continuously invented taxes . . . and made himself a partner in all building and property [transactions]. As a matter of fact, he was better off than a partner. He received one-third of what was sold or rented, even if this was repeated a number of times a day.

This concentration on the primitive accumulation of wealth was not an end in itself, but was related to the integration of Kuwait into the British division of labour.

---

[2] al-Shamlan, from The History of Kuwait, p.117.

[3] Khaz'al, Vol. 2, pp.296-297.

[4] al-Rushaid, p.189. For an examination of the structure of taxation under Mubarak, al-Mughni, pp.121-122, who estimates that about 60 per cent of Mubarak's income came from taxes. See also, Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1047-1048, and Vol. 2, pt. 2B, p.1076.

Mubarak used this wealth to financially back the expansion of the commerce of the Utbi merchants of Kuwait.[5] These were the petty merchants who dealt primarily with the transfer of subsistence products from external sources to the internal and desert markets. Unlike the Basra merchants who migrated to Kuwait in the late eighteenth century and provided the basis for the take-off of Kuwaiti commerce in terms of fostering a dynamic link between productive centers by development the maritime means of exchange, the Utbi merchants were middlemen merchants between exchange and subsistence consumption. With increasing British domination throughout the 19th century of the productive centers of India and the Gulf region, as well as the communication lines between productive centers, these merchants increasingly looked to the British for their sources of supply.

The interests of the Utbi merchants, then, were not dynamically linked to the development of productive forces in the region that was emerging in the 19th century and ideologically responding to the decay of the Ottoman Empire on the one hand and British imperialism on the other in the form of an emerging Arab nationalism. In fact, Mubarak's usurpation of power severed the dynamic link between Kuwaiti development and regional development, and fostered in its place a link with the British system of production. As a class, the Utbi merchants represented a local bourgeoisie whose interests were narrowly defined in terms of the local market and subsistence consumption. Their linkage with the British system of production rendered Kuwait politically alienated from the development of productive forces in the region, in effect placing them in contradiction with the regionally oriented forces of Arab nationalism emerging in both the Arab centers of the Ottoman Empire and the peninsula hinterland.

---

[5] al-Rushaid, p.187.

Their achievement of dominance in Kuwait over the Ottoman class of merchants through alienation to Britain of Kuwait's autonomy in its foreign affairs in fact marked the alienation to Britain of Kuwait's autonomous development of productive forces. Because of its stark physical environment, such development could only make sense in a regional context. The meagre natural resources of Kuwait provided for only a bare subsistence existence; and its rapid development throughout the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries resulted from the development of its role--productively and politically--in an emerging exchange pattern among productive centers. It was the new structure of the relations of production forged by the linkages with Britain that inhibited the development of productive forces in Kuwait and the region as a whole, initiating the historical process of the underdevelopment of not only Kuwait but the entire region.

The increasing diversity of commodity exchange that typified Gulf commerce in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries not only indicated the increasing productivity of productive centers in the region but also the increasing exchange activity among productive centers. In the second half of the nineteenth century, this increased activity was gradually assuming a new political form--articulated in Kuwait by its increasing ties with Ottoman Iraq, and articulated throughout the region by an emerging Arab nationalism. However, this was occurring at the same time Britain was consolidating, in a piecemeal fashion, its hold on the region. The result of British imperialism was that the growing surplus was increasingly being expropriated out of the region by the British. Kuwait's linkage with Britain was part of this overall process.

An important characteristic of Kuwait's integration into the British division of labour was the return of Kuwaiti commerce to a subsistence market basis. This had two inter-related features:

1. The subordination of Kuwait's merchant fleet to British commercial navigation. The role of Kuwait's merchant fleet in a very active Gulf transit trade was already noted in Chapter II. In 1904, British steamers began to call at Kuwait regularly, and by 1905-06 were

carrying to Kuwait more than 50 per cent of the total value of goods imported there.[6] More importantly for Kuwait's role in the transit traffic (since much of what Kuwaiti ships carried during the 19th century never touched at Kuwait at all), by 1906, ninety-six per cent of the sea traffic to Basra was handled by the British.[7]

2. The types and range of commodities carried on Kuwaiti ships was narrowed to subsistence products for the Kuwaiti and desert hinterland markets. The import-export of surplus products in the region was virtually dominated by the British, leaving Kuwaiti commerce only the marginal subsistence markets and products.[8]

These changes were commensurate with the short-term interests on the Utbi merchants of Kuwait, and their achievement of dominance in Kuwait over the regionally oriented Ottoman class of merchants was an integral part of the process by which Kuwait was integrated into the British division of labour. The immediate effect was to transfer the capital accumulated by the Ottoman merchants to the Utbi merchants. With their transit traffic already marginalized by British competition, Mubarak further weakened them through heavy taxation. This was transferred to the Utbi merchants through liberal loans. The Utbi merchants, in turn, expropriated the shipping fleets as the Ottoman class of merchants fell into their debt and were gradually forced to forfeit ownership of the ships in payment, since they were no longer competitive in the transit trade.

---

[6] Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, pp.1055-1056.

[7] Busch, p.307.

[8] See Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, pp.1056-1058, for tables on Kuwait's imports and re-exports in 1905-06, and the means of transport, which eflects the means of British peenetration of Kuwait's economic substructure.

The long-term effect was to transfer out of the region the capital expropriated. The increasing volume of goods coming into Kuwait on British carriers had to be paid for, and this payment was expropriated out of the region. Since the deepening of the commodity market in Kuwait was specifically limited by its subsistence character, the only mechanisms available to the Utbi merchants to compensate for the capital drain were: expansion of the size of the subsistence markets served by the Utbi merchants; greater rate of exploitation of labour, represented by the taxation system which diminished the proportion of returns to labour (to be discussed in detail later in the chapter).

Mubarak's attempts to expand his influence in Central Arabia were intimately related to the expansion of the subsistence markets served by Kuwaiti commerce.

Kuwait was the principal port serving the markets of Central Arabia. Encouraged by the British in their efforts to weaken Ottoman Iraq's influence in the Peninsula and establish an alliance with Ibn Saud, Mubarak attempted to consolidate Kuwait's relationship with the tribes and expand the limits of Kuwait's territorial sovereignty by fomenting the conflict between Ibn Saud on one side and the forces of Ibn Rashid and Ottoman Iraq on the other. However, Mubarak's aspirations in Central Arabia inevitably brought him into conflict with Ibn Saud whose success in building a territorially delineated nation specifically circumscribed the limits of Kuwait's political and commercial relationship to the area.[9]

Pearling represented the only true form of commodity production in Kuwait. With the dynamic link to productive centers cut off and commerce circumscribed to subsistence markets, pearl production provided the only source of capital for subsistence acquisition, as in early Kuwait. However, unlike early Kuwait, the production cycle was accumulation, not subsistence oriented. Throughout the

---

[9] For detailed accounts of Mubarak's affairs in Central Arabia, see al-Rushaid, pp.179-186, and Khaz'al, Vol. 2, pp.170-256.

19th century, the Kuwaiti pearl merchants had realized enormous profits in the exchange-value of pearls, and had enjoyed complete autonomy in shaping the structure of productive relations in the industry. To compensate for the rate of capital drain in commerce with Britain, however, Mubarak attempted to bring this industry under his control to sustain the commercial sector. He established a tax on all pearling boats amounting to one diver's share.[10] In effect, this increased the rate of surplus value realized from pearling by diminishing the diver's share of the profit. But this increase in the rate of surplus value did not benefit the pearl merchants. Rather, it was transferred to Mubarak.

However, Mubarak's efforts to further subordinate the relations of production in the pearling industry to his centralized authority were firmly resisted by the pearl merchants. In 1909, he declared a ban on diving for the season. The major pearl merchants--Hilal Mutayri, Shamlan Ibn Ali and Ibrahim Ibn Mudhif--responded to his interference in their affairs by migrating from Kuwait with their followers (minor merchants, divers and pearling ship crews) after the diving season. According to al-Rushaid,

---

[10] Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, p.1076.

"those migrants and their followers comprised half [of the population] of Kuwait."[11] Mubarak made many concessions to the merchants to return them to Kuwait, and even went to Bahrein himself to convince Hilal Mutayri to return.[12]

With the onset of the First World War, Sheikh Mubarak's relationship to British imperialism in the Middle East was completely revealed. In exchange for Mubarak's assistance to British forces in the pacification of the Shatt-al-Arab region and occupation of Basra,[13] Britain guaranteed to Mubarak: 1. Basra, once rested from Turkish control, would not be returned to Turkish suzerainty; 2. Mubarak's palm tree groves situated near Fao would be permanently exempted from taxation; 3. Britain would guarantee the protection of Kuwait.[14] With the help of Mubarak and other tribal leaders of the region (most notably Ibn Saud and Sheikh Khaz'al of Muhammerah), on November 21, 1914, Britain occupied Basra.

---

[11] al-Rushaid, p.167.

[12] Ibid., pp.167-169. There is no indication of the nature of the concessions. al-Rushaid's account stresses Mubarak's guarantee to respect the personal authority and integrity of the pearl merchants. Also, see al-Shamlan, From the History of Kuwait, pp.151-152.

[13] See Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours, pp.151-151.

[14] Text of letter from Sir Percy Cox, British Political Resident in the Gulf, to Mubarak, in Khaz'al, Vol. 2, p.155.

The British success, however, was not without resistance. Many of the tribes under Sheikh Khaz'al's suzerainty responded to the Khalife's call for jihad and rebelled against Khaz'al because of his support to the British. When Sheikh Mubarak attempted to come to Khaz'al's assistance by mobilizing Kuwaiti forces to help quell the rebellion, Kuwaitis refused to participate. As a result, Mubarak was forced to moderate his demand for Kuwaiti mobilization.[15] al-Rushaid comments that Mubarak "was disturbed by the degree of enthusiasm for the rebellion common among Kuwaitis, something he had not seen the equivalent of all his life."[16]

Mubarak died suddenly in late 1915, and the amirship of Kuwait passed to his son Jabir. The nature of rule he passed on to Jabir is evident in the description supplied by a religious leader of his conversation with Jabir prior to Mubarak's death:[17]

---

[15] For details, see Khaz'al, Vol. 2, pp.257-259; and al-Rushaid, pp.174-176.

[16] al-Rushaid, p.175.

[17] Hafidh Wahbah, Jazirat al-Arab (The Arab Peninsula), (Cairo: n.p., 1946), pp.135-136.

> In the winter of 1333 hijari (1915), I was in a conversation with Sheikh Jabir al-Sabah, the son of the Kuwaiti Amir who became Amir himself 1915-1917. I complained of Sheikh Mubarak's high taxes and the method of their collection . . . I was explaining to Sheikh Jabir the [Prophet's] Tradition which states: 'Each one of you is a shephard and each one of you is responsible for his people . . .' Sheikh Jabir said: 'Your talk is the talk of religious people; what distinguishes the Amir from salesmen and shopkeepers . . . Take my word, subjects are like sheep. Whenever the wool grows, we shear it.' I replied: 'However . . . sheep need someone to take care of them so they may grow in number. And you are not satisfied with the wool. Very often your scissors reaches the skin.' He replied, 'The ruler must have a free hand in everything - property, lives. When the subjects become prosperous and their wealth increases, they rebel against the ruler and he may lose control.' I said to him, 'The ruler and the subjects are bound together for the good of the country, and they are not enemies of each other. The ruler is a father of everybody. He should not create division or hatred . . . .' He said, 'Oh Sheikh, there is no use to this discussion. We do not understand governing to be different from what I have already described to you . . . .'

With the closing of the period of Mubarak's reign, the transformation-integration process was essentially completed. Kuwait had been transformed from an autonomous merchant community to an outpost in what was essentially Britain's Gulf colony.[18] The British Political Agent in Kuwait, first posted there in 1904,[19] was part of the colonial bureaucracy established in the Gulf.[20] He administered the affairs of Kuwait through Mubarak, who became a despot vis-a-vis his people and a bureaucratic operative vis-a-vis the colonial administration.

---

[18] For an overview of Mubarak's relations with Britain over the period of his reign, see Husayn, pp.26-32.

Kuwait Between Two World Wars

While the transformation-integration process served the short-term interests of the Utbi merchants, the longer term effect was the complete drain of resources from Kuwait. By the end of Mubarak's reign, the framework of contradictions of peripheral capitalism--of Kuwait as a regional center of capital accumulation for British expropriation--had been established. These contradictions were:

1. The contradiction of capital accumulation/expropriation.
2. The contradiction of independence/dependence.

---

[19] For an account of the consolidation of British commercial and political ties with Mubarak that accompanied the posting of the Political Agent in Kuwait, see Shaz'al, Vol. 2, pp.138-139; also, Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 1B, pp.1038-1040.

[20] For a discussion of the structure of this bureaucracy, see Herbert F. Liebesny, "International Relations of Arabia: The Dependent Areas," The Middle East Journal, Vol. 1, No. 2 pp.156-165.

Capital Accumulation/Expropriation

The class character of production relations and the capital drain character of peripheral capitalism resulted in the increasing rate of exploitation of labour; not, however, to sustain a rate of investment in the development of productive forces as in classical capitalist development. Rather, the increasing rate of exploitation of labour was required to sustain the level of development against the debilitating force of continuing capital drain.

The form of exploitation depended upon the character of production. Fishing remained an unorganized and unexploited sector participated in freely and at will (or necessity) by all segments of the society. Access to the sea could not be alienated, and the productivity of the sea was neither seasonal nor did it require technical means for exploitation. Production in this sector remained essentially for private consumption.

The autonomous or semi-autonomous character of agricultural and animal husbandry production sustained the inalienability of the means of production of this tribally organized sector of labour. Without the resources for substantial capital investment, these economic sectors could not be brought into commodity production.[21] Nevertheless, the alienation of their meagre surplus through heavy taxation (10 per cent) on all supplies they purchased from Kuwait was the mechanism of exploitation.[22] The result of this exploitation of hinterland production was the release of marginal labour to the city. Because of the increasing prices of the necessities they secured from the city markets, it was necessary to sell their labour in the city.

This release of marginal hinterland labour to the city resulted in the rapid growth of population. Estimates of Kuwait's population from 1760 to the turn of the 20th century indicate that the population remained at about 10,000. A plague that hit the eastern Arabian Peninsula and Iraq about 1831 reduced Kuwait's population to about 4,000, but by 1860 it had reached 10,000 again.[23] By 1910, however, the population jumped to 35,000, and by 1938, to 75,000, primarily as a result of the immigration of the tribes.[24]

---

[21] Jahrah was the only center of sedantary agriculture in Kuwait where any surplus was realized. About 20 miles west of Kuwait City, the village in 1904 had 86 permanent dwellings which accommodated about 500 inhabitants. They lived as tenant farmers tilling the land owned by the sheikh or rich town merchants. The organization of production, then, was essentially feudal. Only about 30 tons of surplus grain were realized annually and exported to Kuwait City. See Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2A, pp.896-1898.

[22] Najat 'Abdul Qadir al-Jasim, al-Tatawur al-Siyasi wa- al-Iqtisadi lil Kuwayt bayn al-Harbayn 1914-1939 (The Political and Economic Development of Kuwait between Two World Wars, 1914-1939), (Cairo: al-Matba'ah al-Fanniyah al-Haditha, 1973), p.206.

The release of labour power to the city markets facilitated the expansion of pearl exploitation and subsistence commerce. Both these sectors relied upon a form of exploitation of wage labour as the mechanism for accumulation. In both, the organization of production was specifically geared to primitive accumulation in the framework of British expropriation.

The Political Economy of Pearling. Because of a favourable world market for pearls and the expansion of labour available to the industry, the Kuwaiti pearl industry rapidly expanded[25] in the first quarter of the twentieth century, reaching a zenith in 1911--called the year of al-Tafha (overflow) in local tradition.[26] In this period of rapid expansion, the pearl merchants gained direct control over the means of production and the harvest. New captains entering the industry sought financing for the construction and outfitting of their boats directly from the pearl merchants.[27] In return, they committed their harvest to the merchants, and when the harvest was insufficient to cover the debt, forfeited their independence.[28]

---

[23] Fatima Husayn Yusif al-Abdul Razzak, al-Miyah wa al-Sukan fi al-Kuwayt (Water and Population in Kuwait), (Kuwait: n.p., 1974), p.178.

[24] Mohammed Mahjub, Muqaddimah li-dirasat al-Mujtama'at al-Badawiyah (Introduction to the Study of Bedouin Societies), (Kuwait: Wakalat al-Mutboa'at, 1974), p.110. A British Trade Report for 1937-38 estimated the population at that time at 60,000. Political Agent, Kuwait, Trade Report for Kuwait, 1937-38, F.O. File #L/P&S/12/3743, p.4.

[25] Reflecting this, the great majority of divers were bedouin. See al-Shamlan, History of Pearling in Kuwait . . . , p.379.

Two general systems of financing existed. In the first, called the System of Fifths (Khamamis), the distribution of proceeds from the harvest was based upon shares.[29] All of the pearls harvested by a boat during the pearling season were kept by the captain who sold them to the itinerant petty merchants making the rounds of the pearling fleets during the season or at the end of the season to the wholesale merchants in the market. From the proceeds of the pearls, the financier and the owner of the boat (whether the captain, the financier, or a third party) each took one-fifth. The financier's portion was a 20 per cent rate of interest on the capital he advanced, and the captain was still indebted for the principal. The cost of food and supplies was then deducted, and the captain and crew divided up the remainder on the basis of pre-arranged shares, allocating part to the diving tax instituted by Mubarak. An example of the distribution among the crew is given in Table 1:

---

[26] al-Qana'ie, p.64. Al-Qatami, p.200, one of the foremost authorities on sea industries in Kuwait, states that in that year the number of pearling boats in the Kuwait registry was 1,200.

[27] Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 2, p.2227, indicates that a class of financiers (musaqqamin) who advanced their own capital or borrowed capital had formerly financed the outfitting of the ships. But by the early twentieth century this class of middlemen financiers between pearl merchants and captains was disappearing.

[28] Guide to Kuwait, p.74.

[29] See al-Qatami, pp.222-223, for details of this system.

Table 1:
Distribution of the Pearling Crews' Income

Description of Crew	Number of Crew	Shares Drawn By Each	Total Shares
Captain	1	3	3
Divers	10	3	30
Haulers	10	2	20
Cook	1	2	2
Haulers' Assistants	2	1	2
*Tax		3	3
Total	24		60

*The tax was not included in the original source, but has been included here to show the complete distribution of income. See al-Qatami, p.222.

Source: Political Agent, Kuwait, Trade Report for Kuwait, 1937-38, F.O. File #L/P&S/12/3743, p.5.

This system of financing the pearling ships concentrated the earnings of the industry in the hands of the pearling merchants, and progressively reduced the returns to labour in the industry. The price of the pearl paid by the pearl merchants to the captains in the local market was four to six times below the price realized by these merchants in the main trading centers of Manamah and Bombay.[30] Furthermore, the commitment of the harvest to the merchant financing the voyage reduced competition for the harvest among the pearl merchants. Where the captain and the merchant he was bound to through the financial system disagreed upon the price of the pearls, a third merchant, either agreed upon by the two parties privately or appointed by the Court of Diving (Salifat al-Ghaus) mediated the dispute.[31] Finally, the tax levied on the diving ships fell directly upon the crews' shares, further diminishing the returns to labour.[32]

---

[30] Allan Villiers, Sons of Sinbad (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1969), p.353. Villiers spent two years sailing with the ocean-going fleet and the pearling fleet in Kuwait, 1938-40. In this book, he describes in detail the social, technical and economic organizations of these industries. Also see Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 2, pp.2236-2242, for a detailed description of the valuation systems for pearls and some of the methods used by the merchants to minimize the price paid to the captains.

[31] al-Shamlan, History of Pearling in Kuwait, p.284.

[32] Ibid., p.319, comments that "This tax is taken by the ruler, who provides nothing in return. In other words, he does nothing to help the diver."

The position of the captain as an independent owner of the means of production was progressively bastardized by this system that in effect reduced him to a wage labourer. Where he was able to maintain even nominal ownership of the boat, the costs of construction and the annual costs of outfitting the boat forced him into the hands of the financiers because of the lower return he was receiving in a non-competitive pearl market. If he was unable to repay the debt at the end of the season, he either forfeited ownership of the boat, or was bound to the same financier for the next season, the more common resolution and indeed one perpetuating the monopoly of the merchants. Divers preferred, of course, to sign on with captains who financed their own voyages, since such captains were then free to sell their pearls in the open market to the highest bidder.[33] In this case of market competition, the system of shares worked to the advantage of labour, and it appears that this was the original system of sharing the returns to pearling before the monopolistic practices of the merchants closed off open competition and independent captains were choked off by the increasing necessity for financing.

---

[33] _Ibid._, p.284.

The second system of finance, known as the System of Advances, (al-Salifiyyah) appears to be an outgrowth of the first, resulting from the increasing inability of captains to perpetuate their independence, the increasing inability of pearling labour to annually reproduce itself from the income realized, and the increasing concentration of capital in the hands of a small class of merchants.[34] In this system, the distribution of income was ideally based upon shares as in the System of Fifths, but this had in fact become a fiction. Because of the inability of divers and their families to subsist on the income earned in a diving season, the captain borrowed from the merchant in order to advance the diver cash prior to the season. If the returns to labour from the season were insufficient to cover the debt (principal plus interest), the diver was bound to the same captain for the next season. If the diver died and was still under debt to a captain, the debt was passed on to his family who continued diving for the captain to pay off the debt, and in the process incurred their own debt. Examining this system, Rumaihi observed, "so the debts of the diver will increase year after year until he finds himself captive of the owner of the ship."[35] Thus, labour lost its market autonomy, and the entire mode of pearl exploitation was held together by a hierarchical debt system that perpetuated accumulation at the top by a system of effective bondage. Villiers observed:[36]

---

[34] This system was not even identified by Lorimer as a distinct system of financing. By 1912, Ruziq 'Isa, in an article entitled "Maghasat al-Lu'lu" (The Location of Pearls), published in the Baghdad journal, Lughat al-Arab, No. 12 (May 1912), identified the System of Advances as a distinct, and indeed, dominant one.

> The whole economic structure of the industry . . . was based on debt. Everybody was in debt - the diver to the nakhoda [captain], the nakhoda to the merchant who financed him, the merchant to some other merchant bigger than himself, the bigger merchants to the sheikh.

The whole structure rested upon the shoulders of the divers. Without technical aids, and only the hauler's line to connect them with the surface, they dove to depths of 8 to 16 fathoms, depending upon their skill and daring, to scurry at the bottom for 40 to 75 seconds recovering oysters.[37] Pearl-diving was a particularly hazardous and strenuous occupation, and a pearl-diver's life was generally short-lived. Bowens provides a graphic summary of this labour:[38]

---

[35] Mohammad Ghanim al-Rumaihi, al-Bitrol wa- al-Taghayur al-Ijtima'i fi al-Khalij al-Arabi (Oil and Social Change in the Arab Gulf), (Kuwait: Mu'ussasat al-Wihdah lil Nashr wa- al-Tawzi', 1975), p.33.

[36] p.353.

[37] See Villiers, pp.349-374. Also, Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 2, pp.2228-2229.

> When the season is over, the diver has weathered the impossible; he has probably completed over 3,000 dives in from 30 to 50 feet of water, and has spent over 50 hours under the surface of the Persian Gulf - that is, over a full forty-hour week without air . . . . It is not surprising that there are one or two empty stations on each boat; their occupants lie huddled corpse-like under their cloaks in some part of the ship, too sick from scurvy or plain fatigue to dive. After they have been at it for many weeks, the divers are apt to get convulsive shivers when they come out of the water to rest, even though the temperature may be 100° F. . .

The Court of Divers was the tribunal reconstituted yearly by the Amir to resolve disputes in the industry--whether between divers and captains, or captains and merchants. It was composed of the merchants and captains appointed by the Amir to mediate disputes. The decisions were binding on both parties to a dispute.[39] The divers had no representation. In 1940, the Amir codified the practices governing the industry that had evolved out of this tribunal over the years and attempted to introduce a number of minor reforms to ameliorate the worse abuses of the system. The law is reproduced in Appendix I.

---

[38] Richard Le Baron Bowen, "Pearl Fisheries of the Persian Gulf," in The Middle East Journal, Vol. 5, No. 2 (Spring 1951), p.173.

[39] See Lorimer, Vol. 1, pt. 2, p.2234, Villiers, pp.354-355, and Bowen, p.179, for a description of the Court of Divers.

The pearl industry in Kuwait continued to expand until 1929 when the world economic depression weakened the market considerably. Furthermore, the appearance of Japanese cultured pearls in 1930 depreciated the price of pearls generally in the world market.[40] As a result, by the end of the decade many of the merchants and captains were bankrupt, their boats abandoned onshore or taken over by the big merchants in payment of debts.[41] In this period, the divers were reduced to total poverty, but many were bound by the debt system to continue in an industry that could no longer provide even minimum subsistence. Thus, in the diving season, they worked on the pearling fleets to pay off their debts, and the rest of the year eked out a livelihood as best they could. Many returned to the desert, others to petty commerce at sea or fishing, and still others to construction for the nascent oil industry.

---

[40] See Villiers, pp.349-353, for a discussion of the decline of the industry.

[41] The Trade Report for Kuwait, 1937-38, p.4, noted that "The Kuwait pearling fleet consists of 700 boats but only 200 to 300 boats put to sea in recent years."

The Political Economy of Dhow Commerce. In the period under consideration subsistence commerce expanded rapidly. The increase in Kuwait's population was an important factor stimulating this expansion. The environment of Kuwait could not even provide sufficient drinking water for the town. Brackish water for cooking, gardening and animals was provided by wells outside the town, and drinking water was brought in by donkeys from other villages and sold by peddlers in Kuwait. By 1910, however, because of population expansion, drinking water had to be brought in by dhow from Basra.[42] So it was with other rudimentary subsistence necessities, and local dhow traffic expanded.

In addition, during the First World War, British steamers were brought into the war effort, returning the commerce between India and the Gulf to the dhow trade. Because of the scarcity of goods during the war, huge profits were made by the merchants participating in this trade. Furthermore, the British attempted to blockade commerce via the Gulf to Ottoman territories in the Middle East. Some Kuwaiti merchants accumulated vast fortunes through smuggling. In fact, this activity brought Salim (ruler of Kuwait from 1917-21) into direct confrontation with the British, and precipitated a British blockade of Kuwait in 1918.[43]

---

[42] al-Qana'ie, p.69. Even in 1904, according to Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, p.1052, this traffic did not exist. See also Alan Villiers, "Some Aspects of the Arab Dhow Trade," The Middle East Journal, Vol. 2, No. 4 (October 1948), p.399, who noted that in 1939 there were 50 or 60 small dhows in Kuwait engaged in local trade, and "many of them engaged in bringing fresh water" to Kuwait from Basra.

However, after the war, the British steamers resumed their commercial activities, and the smuggling traffic died with the end of the blockade. With the British in occupation of Iraq, Kuwaiti merchant capital[44] moved to the purchase of date palm plantations along the Shatt-al-Arab, and the transit of wet dates from these groves to India and down the coast of the Arabian Sea as far as Aden became the principal cargo of the Kuwaiti deep-sea fleet. Some ships continued down the East African coast as far south as Zanzibar.[45]

---

[43] For details, see al-Rushaid, pp.57-58; al-Jasim, pp.120-125, and Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours, pp.243-244.

[44] Except for the groves of the ruling family, there is no indication in the records of the ownership by merchant families of palm groves in Iraq prior to the First World War. It appears that this developed in the period between the wars while the British were in occupation of Iraq, although the extent of such holdings is unknown. See Villiers, "Some Aspects of the Arab Dhow Trade," p.401, and Sons of Sinbad, p.399. For a description of al-Sabah property in Iraq see Foreign Office File #R/15/1/510, "Kuwait: Properties of Sheikhs of Kuwait and Mohammerah in Mesopotamia, 1913-1914." and Freeth and Winstone, pp.112-113.

[45] See Villiers, Sons of Sinbad, and "Some Aspects of the Arab Dhow Trade," for complete descriptions of Kuwait's dhow industry.

The cargo carried by these ships was Iraqi dates. The voyages to India brought back shipbuilding materials, coir for cordage, and Malabar teak; the return voyages from East Africa brought back mangrove poles from the Rufiji Delta for roofing Kuwaiti houses. In addition, the crews engaged in a variety of lesser trading, both legal and illegal, from trinkets to passenger carrying--anything that could be picked up in one port of call and deposited in another at a profit. The dhow captains were themselves mini-merchants, peddling goods as well as dates to native bazaars along the Indian and East African coasts. "The dhow is a peddlar, as well as a carrier; a storehouse, as well as a ship; a means of livelihood to travelling merchants, as well as to her crew proper," observed Alan Villiers.[46]

These voyages took from four to nine months; the size of the ships ranged from 75 tons to 300 tons, with the size of the crew varying from 20 to 60. In 1939, Kuwait had a registered fleet of 106 ocean-going dhows and from 50 to 60 smaller dhows engaged in inner-Gulf trade.[47]

The system of financing in this industry was based upon the merchant's role in financing the construction of the ship and advancing the date cargo, carried on a freight basis, to finance the voyage. According to Villiers, "finance is always provided by a merchant--usually a merchant with an interest in date plantations on the Basra River . . . who wishes to use the new vessel for carrying his dates . . . ."[48] In this way, merchant families would have an interest in a series of dhows. But the loss of a vessel and its freight was carried by the captain, not the merchant. Villiers noted:[49]

---

[46] Villiers, "Some Aspects of the Arab Dhow Trade," p.401.

[47] Ibid., pp.403-404.

> In Kuwait, immediately prior to the outbreak of World War II, there was beginning to be some restiveness about this, and an association of the nakhodas had the temerity to issue its demands upon the merchants. These included payment of demurrage when unduly delayed at the loading berths in Basra (a dhow might be kept for weeks waiting for her cargo), a sliding scale of freights for different ports instead of the customary flat rate of 1.5 or 2 rupees a package regardless of destination, liability for the return of advances to cease with the loss of the ship . . . . but the merchants' answer was that if the nakhodas could make new rules so could they; and they had the real power.

The merchant who advanced his capital thus took no risk on his investment or cargo, and realized the added dividend of interest which bound the captain permanently to the merchant. The ship, as the productive unit, bore the burden entirely and shared what income the voyage realized. The distribution of income was based upon the system of shares. From the total proceeds of the voyage, the cost of food supplies was deducted. The shipowner took half of the net proceeds, and the remainder was divided among the crew, as shown in Table 2:[50]

---

[48] Villiers, Sons of Sinbad, p.399. See pp.397-404 for details of the economics of the deep-sea dhow.

[49] Villiers, "Some Aspects of the Arab Dhow Trade," pp.401-403.

Table 2:

Distribution of the Merchant Crew's Income

		Number of Shares Drawn by Each		
Crew	Number of Crew	From Crew's Income	From Ship-Owner's Income	Total Shares
Captain	1	1	2	3
1st steerer	1	1	0½	1½
2nd steerer	1	1	0½	1½
3rd steerer	1	1½	0	1½
Foreman	1	1	0	1½
Crew	19	1	0	19
Cook	1	1½	0	1½
Jollyboat	-	1	0	1
Total	25			30½

Source: Political Agent, Kuwait, Trade Report for Kuwait, 1937-38, p.5.

---

[50] The number of crew given in the table indicates one of the smaller ocean-going vessels--about 100 tons. The larger ships carried a much larger crew, including singers and musicians for the entertainment of crew and the captain's business parties in every port. Villiers' 150 ton ship had a total crew of 36, which included the entertainers. Also, the captain's shares also varied. On Villiers' ship, the captain took five shares. See Villiers, Sons of Sinbad, p.402, and al-Qatami, pp.239-241.

The system of advance to the crew also operated in this industry. But the debt structure was not as debilitating as in the pearling industry, for some subsistence income could still be realized in spite of the structure of exploitation. In fact, during the inter-war period, sailing on merchant vessels superseded pearl diving as the basis of labour's subsistence,[51] and it was only by stringent enforcement of debt obligations that diving was not abandoned altogether.[52] Nevertheless, the ocean-going dhows were being increasingly marginalized by the competition of the European steamships, and it was only the occurrence of the Second World War that gave them a brief boom before air transport and modern shipping in the framework of market monopolies in the world capitalist structure eliminated them completely.

The Polarization of Capital and Labour. The result of the increasing rate of accumulation for British expropriation was the monopolization of capital on the one hand and the homogenization of labour on the other, and their increasing polarization. The peripheral character of capitalism in Kuwait as established under Mubarrak was specified politically and economically by the dependence of this class upon the transfer of British transported commodities to the local and hinterland market. Table 3, below, reflects the extent to which Kuwait's commerce had passed into the hands of British steamers in the inter-war period:

---

[51] Villiers, Sons of Sinbad, pp. 352-353.

[52] See Articles 1-3 and 43-49 in the Law of Diving, Appendix I.

Table 3:

Imports and Exports of Kuwait
by Mode of Transport, 1935-38

	1935-36	1936-37	1937-38
Imports			
Steamer	73.4%	70.3%	67.7%
Dhow	26.6	29.7	32.3
	100.0%	100.0%	100.0%
Exports			
Steamer	65.8%	42.2%	47.9%
Dhow	34.2	55.8	52.1
	100.0%	100.0%	100.0%

Source: Political Agent, Kuwait, Trade Report for Kuwait, 1937-38, pp.6-24.

The principal articles coming into Kuwait or being re-exported from Kuwait by steamer were not only the manufactured goods of the industrial world, such as piece goods, hardware and glassware, but also the primary consumption products from other centers in the Gulf, such as coffee, rice, tea, sugar, that had been the mainstay of Kuwait's commerce in the nineteenth century.[53] The greater percentage of goods entering and leaving Kuwait by dhow in 1937-38 was a result of British war preparations.

---

[53] Trade Report for Kuwait, 1937-38, pp.7, 20.

The merchant class of Kuwait was juxtaposed between the import and re-export of commodities transported primarily by British steamer.[54] As the wholesale merchants in the market place, they sold to the small retail traders and merchants at high rates of interest, taking two-thirds of the profits realized through retailing.[55] As the trading center for the tribes of Najd, as well as many of the tribes of Iraq and north Syria on whose annual migration routes Kuwait lay, their middleman commercial role was significant to British commerce, and was, indeed, the initial basis of their accumulation. When Ibn Saud banned the tribes of Najd from trading in Kuwait in 1923[56] (a ban that lasted until 1937), many of the small merchants went bankrupt.[57]

---

[54] By the mid-thirties, the Japanese were entering the Gulf as significant competitors of the British. Of the 85 steamers which entered the Port of Kuwait in 1937-38, 57 were British and 21 Japanese (the remainder being two German and 5 Dutch steamers). The Trade Report for Kuwait, 1937-38, p.2, reported: "Japan continued to exploit the Kuwait market as was reported last year. Their goods retained their popularity almost to the exclusion of those of all other nationalities. . . . The majority of the inhabitants of Kuwait earn little more than suffices to eke out a bare existence. To be readily saleable therefore everything must be of the lowest possible price whatever its quality or lasting properties may be."

[55] See al-Naqeeb, p.130, and al-Mughni, p.132.

[56] Primarily a result of monetary, territorial and tribal disputes with Kuwait. See Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours, pp.243-259 and pp.270-278.

This did not affect the big merchant class, however, for their interests had become diversified through their financial role in the pearling industry and their investment in date plantations in Iraq. Through the expansion of labour available to the pearling industry, the rate of accumulation of this class was enhanced by the expansion of production of exchange value. The merchant class, as the class financing the expansion of pearling, gained control over this means of production. When the pearl market fell in 1929, it took all of the petty capitalists with it.[58] Only about eleven families, including the ruling family, remained with capital.[59]

This class of financial merchants, in the meantime, had invested in the Iraqi wet dates industry and utilized the depressed labour in Kuwait to exploit labour for the expansion of wet-date commerce. The sea-farers not only made up the crew for the journey but also were responsible for making the ship's sails, rigging the ship, paying her bottom and floating her away from the dockyard. All this represented essentially unpaid labour. The carpenters were only responsible for building the hull and caulking. In this way, their craft was bastardized by reduction to a minimum set of tasks, and speed of completion, not durability of product, became the criterion of craftsmanship.[60] Similarly in this period the captains were reduced to wage-earners, and the share system in effect made much of their work unpaid labour. Thus, the tribal distinctions that differentiated classes of producers in early Kuwait were obliterated, and labour in the inter-war period became a homogeneous mass that engaged in pearling in the summer months and seafaring in the winter. Furthermore, hinterland production, which had been central to the economy of early Kuwait, was marginal to it by the inter-war period.

---

[57] See Freeth and Winstone, pp.89-90, and Van Pelt, p.22.

[58] See al-Qana'ie, pp.62-64, and al-Rushaid, pp.57-58, for discussions of bankruptcy.

[59] See Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours, p.41, who lists the "leading" families in Kuwait. These were the rich merchant families, most of whom were among the original Anizah migrants to Kuwait with al-Sabah. al-Qana'ie, pp.60-65, enumerates and discusses some of the wealthiest merchants in Kuwait. See also al-Naqeeb, p.129.

Independence/Dependence

Throughout the inter-war period, Kuwait's character as an independent entity within the Arab Gulf continued to develop within the framework of British imperial policy in the area. This process had two essential inter-related facets: economic and political. Kuwait's economic independence from the Gulf, as already discussed, related to the breaking of its commercial ties with productive centers in the region and their substitution by commercial ties with the British productive system. Politically, the integration into the British division of labour specifically inhibited the development of labour beyond the bounds of the polity Britain defined as Kuwait. As a result, the development of productive forces was circumscribed to the intensification of pearling for the production of exchange value.

---

[60] See Villiers, Sons of Sinbad, pp.379, 397-399.

It was in the inter-war period that independence as a geographic question of state boundaries and as a legal question of political authority and legitimacy was ultimately alienated from the regional framework of Arab nationalism. It was in this period, in other words, that Kuwait emerged as a national entity--a polity defined in terms of the geographic dimensions of dependent production rather than the social dimensions of culture and history. The solution was a British one imposed to serve imperial interests. It gave geographic form to Kuwait as an independent state without sovereignty and political form to Kuwait as an autocracy without power.

The Question of Boundaries. The question of the geographic area they were willing to defend as Kuwait had plagued the British since the 1899 agreement. In compiling his Gazateer for British officials in the first decade of the twentieth century, Lorimer observed: "The boundaries of the Kuwait principality are for the most part fluctuating and undefined; they are, at any given time, the limits of the tribes which then, either voluntarily or under compulsion, own allegiance to the Shaikh of Kuwait."[61] The Anglo-Turkish Convention of 1913 attempted to resolve the question of the territorial limits of Ottoman sovereignty vis-a-vis Kuwait.[62] However, the First World War changed the power configuration in the region considerably. The dismemberment of the Ottoman Empire, the creation of Iraq as a kingdom under British mandate, and the rise of Ibn Saud and Ikhwan power in Central Arabia all lessened the strategic importance of Kuwait from the British standpoint.

At the Uqair Conference in 1922, Sir Percy Cox, then British High Commissioner in Iraq, attempted to contain the expansion of Ikhwan power under Ibn Saud through a boundary settlement of the frontiers between Iraq, Kuwait and Sa'udi Arabia. At the conference, Ibn Saud represented the interests of Najd; Sabih Beg, Iraqi Minister of Communications and Works, represented Iraq; and Major J. C. More, British Political Agent in Kuwait, represented the interests of Kuwait. After five days of dispute between the Iraqi Minister and Ibn Saud over territorial questions, Dickson (who arranged the conference for Cox and was present throughout) reports:[63]

---

[61] Lorimer, Vol. 2, pt. 2B, p.1059.

[62] For the text of draft convention, see J. C. Hurewitz (comp., trans., ed.), The Middle East and North Africa in World Politics: A Documentary Record, Vol. 1, (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1975), pp.568-570.

> Sir Percy took a red pencil and very carefully drew in on the map of Arabia a boundary line . . . This gave Iraq a large area of the territory claimed by Najd. Obviously to placate Ibn Saud, he ruthlessly deprived Kuwait of nearly two-thirds of her territory and gave it to Najd, his argument being that the power of Ibn Sabah [desert title of the ruler of Kuwait] was much less in the desert than it had been when the Anglo-Turkish Agreement had been drawn up.

The red line was a fait accompli for Iraq and Kuwait, both puppet states of Britain. Ibn Saud was the only independent power negotiating in terms of his nation's interests, but, according to Dickson, "he clearly recognized that to defy Great Britain was to court disaster."[64] Sheikh Ahmed (who acceded to the throne of Kuwait in 1921) could only acquiesce to the British settlement. Dickson reports his reaction to the news, however, accordingly:[65]

---

[63] Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours, p.274; for details of the conference see pp.270-280.

[64] Ibid., pp.272-273.

> Both Major More and myself, I only in a secretarial capacity, were present when Sir Percy broke the news to the ruler of Kuwait that he had been obliged to give away to Ibn Saud nearly two-thirds of the kingdom claimed by Shaikh Ahmad. Shaikh Ahmad pathetically asked why he had done this without even consulting him. Sir Percy replied, that, on this unfortunate occasion, the sword had been mightier than the pen, and that had he not conceded the territory, Ibn Saud would certainly have soon picked a quarrel and taken it, if not more, by force of arms. As it was, he (Sir Percy) had placated Shaikh Ahmad's powerful neighbour and brought about a friendly feeling for Kuwait. Shaikh Ahmad then asked if Great Britain had not entered the war in defence of the rights of small nations. Sir Percy admitted that this was correct.

The settlement did not placate Ibn Saud or the Ikhwan, however. Since Kuwait was economically, geographically and culturally an integral part of the desert, Saudi pressures on Kuwait continued. In 1923, Ibn Saud banned the Najd tribes from trading in Kuwait, in effect attempting to force Kuwait for economic reasons to forego its ties with Britain and ally itself with the expanding Saudi empire. While the ban had a negligible impact on the merchant class during the twenties, with the fall of the pearl market by the end of that decade the effects were severely felt. By 1933, it appeared to British officials that there was growing sympathy in Kuwait for allying Kuwait with Saudi Arabia, and Sheikh Ahmad and Ibn Saud were secretly negotiating such arrangements.[66]

---

[65] Ibid., p.279.

However, by this period, Kuwait had assumed new strategic importance to Britain since Iraq had gained full independence and was experiencing nationalist unrest. Kuwait's position at the head of the Persian Gulf and on the Arabian Coast air routes to the East gave it a vital strategic position for the British, especially in case of war.[67] To forestall any agreement between Kuwait and Ibn Saud, Britain asserted its right by the 1899 agreement to handle Kuwait's foreign policy. In March 1934, the Political Agent in Kuwait was directed to assert this right to the Sheikh vis-a-vis his correspondence with Ibn Saud.[68] At the same time, the question of tightening Britain's grip on Kuwait was being considered in detail. The assertion of an open protectorate over Kuwait was rejected in favour of more covert methods of tightening control.[69]

---

[66] See "Note by Sir Andrew Ryan [His Majesty's Minister at Jedda]: Ibn Saud's Attitude towards Kuwait," reproduced in Appendix 2.

[67] See "Relations Between His Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom and the Sheikh of Koweit, Final Record of a Meeting held at the Foreign Office, on October 5, 1933," reproduced in Appendix 2.

[68] See Secretary of State for India to the Political Resident, Persian Gulf, March 9, 1934, in Appendix 2.

The decision not to proclaim the protectorate which in fact existed was based upon the growing force of the pan-Arab, anti-imperialist movement, and the increasing radicalism of the movement resulting from the Palestine issue. Britain's hold on Kuwait was not only threatened by the external pressures on Kuwait emanating from essentially conservative territorial nationalism in Baghdad and Riyadh; more significantly, there was growing anti-British, pan-Arab sentiment in Kuwait itself.[70] This had assumed organizational form by the late thirties and was manifesting itself in Kuwait in the growing demands for representative government, social reforms, and ultimately, real sovereignty.

The Challenge to Autocracy. The question of the autocratic power of the Sabah family vis-a-vis the merchant community first emerged in 1921 with the sudden death of Salim and the consequent emergence of the issue of succession. At that time, the heads of Kuwait's most influential families organized to form a Consultative

---

[69] See Appendix 2 for the details of these issues from British diplomatic correspondence.

[70] See H.R.P. Dickson, "Note on the Shabiba Movement in Iraq: Its Aims and Methods," reproduced in Appendix 3.

Council) (al-Majlis al-Istishari) composed of the following twelve members:[71]

Hamad 'Abd Allah al-Saqr
Hilal bin Fajhan al-Mutayri
al-Shaykh Yusif bin 'Isa al-Qina'i
al-Sayid 'Abd al-Rahman Sayyid Khalif al-Naqib
Shamlan Ibn 'Ali bin Sayf
al-Shaykh 'Abd al-Aziz al-Rushayd
Ahmad Ibn Salih al-Humadi
Marzuq al-Dawud al-Badr
Khalif bin Shahin al-Ghanim
Ahmad al-Fahd al-Khalid
Mish'an al-Khudayir al-Khalid
Ibrahim ibn Mudhif

The immediate objective of the Council was to forestall factionalism within the ruling family over the issue of succession. To this end, the members agreed that 1) if the Sabah family agreed upon the succession of one of the three potential successors--Ahmed al-Jabir, Hamad Mubarrak and Abdullah al-Salim--the Council would accept the nomination; 2) if the Sabah family disagrees, the

---

[71] See Khaz'al, Vol. 5, p.14, and al-Shamlan, From the History of Kuwait, p.199-200. al-Shamlan is the grandson of Shamlan Ibn 'Ali bin Sayf who was a member of the Council and the author utilized private family records to trace the history of Kuwait, particularly in this turbulent period.

Council would refer the matter to the British Political Agent, who would make the selection.[72] It was the longer term objective of the organizers to establish their authority in the administration of the country. Ahmed al-Jabir, who succeeded to the throne unchallenged, pledged himself to work with the Council in the administration of Kuwait's affairs and sent the following letter to Council:[73]

> In the name of God, the benificent, the munificent: This is what is agreed upon between the ruler of Kuwait, Sheikh Ahmed al-Jabir, and his group [the Council]:
>
> First: All rulings among the subjects in [governmental] relations and criminal acts will be in accordance with the honourable Shari' [Islamic] law.
>
> Second: If the convicted claim that the judgement is contrary to the Shari', the case of the plaintiff and defendant and the ruling of the judge will be written and will be forwarded to Islamic Ulama [religious leaders], and their decision will be the accepted judgement to be implemented.
>
> Third: If the two opposing parties to a dispute agree to find a third person who can mediate between them and find accommodation between them, accommodation is better because it is one of the accepted means of Shari'.

---

[72] See al-Shamlan, From the History of Kuwait, pp.194-200. Also, Khaz'al, Vol. 5, pp.12-17, who provides a detailed account of the Council's meetings.

[73] Khaz'al, Vol. 5, p.15, provided the text of the Amir's handwritten letter.

> Fourth: Consultation in the internal affairs of the country and the external affairs that affect the country and may bring prosperity, inhibit corruption and [encourage the development of] a good system.
>
> Fifth: Everyone who has an opinion which may benefit the religious or material well-being of the country and its people can bring it to the attention of the ruler who will consult with his group [Consultative Council]. If they found it to be beneficial, it will be enacted.

The Council lasted for only two months, however. Fighting among its members completely crippled it and resulted in the voluntary dissolution of the body, leaving Sheikh Ahmed with sole authority. Kuwait was at the height of its prosperity at this time, and the issues of power were tangential to this.

Nevertheless, the Amir's pledge became the basis of the demand for parliamentary government as the society edged toward bankruptcy in the thirties as a result of the process of underdevelopment. Bankruptcy, wide-spread poverty, government maladministration and corruption, and the monopoly of the Sabah family on capital accumulation in a declining economy resulted in growing demands for social reform and anti-government agitation.[74] Encouraged by the British Political Agent,[75] the merchants emerged as the moderate leaders of this movement, seeking reform within the structure of Sabah authority and coalescing the nationalist and pan-nationalist elements behind the movement for parliamentary government. In 1938 they formed a secret society--al-Qutlah al-Wataniyah (The National Bloc)--and sent a petition to the Amir demanding that he fulfill his 1921 pledge and form a legislative council. Under British pressure, the Amir accepted the demands, and an election[76]

---

[74] Similar opposition movements were underway in other parts of the Gulf--in Bahrein, Dubai and the Trucial sheikhdoms. By the thirties, the process of underdevelopment of the sheikhdoms of the Gulf has resulted in the poverty of the region, and there was growing opposition

---

to the relations of production created by Britain. See Mohammad Ghanim al-Rumaihi, Mu'awiqat al-Tanniyah al-Ijtima'iyah wa-al-Iqtisadiyah, fi Mujtama'at al-Khalij al-'Arabi al-Mu'asirah (Obstacles to Social and Economic Development in the Contemporary Arab Gulf Societies), (Kuwait, Kadhimah Co., 1977), pp.12-14.

[75] The British did not want to declare an open protectorate in Kuwait and wanted to preserve their control through the Amir. However, the increasing nationalist elements of the movement and its relationship with Arab nationalism in general and Iraqi Arab nationalist groups in particular, and Sheikh Ahmed's repressive measures threatened to polarize the situation and lead to a revolutionary situation. The Political Agent encouraged the leadership of the most moderate element, the merchant class, and supported concessions to this group. For the details of this period through British diplomatic correspondence, see IOR L/P&S/12/3894A, "Persian Gulf: Kuwait Disturbances, 1938, and Consequent Administrative Changes: Kuwait Council." Also see al-Jasim, pp.213-224, where the author examined not only the British records in her study but also the Iraqi newspapers which provided the only outlet for the expression of Kuwaiti opposition in the period.

[76] According to al-Jasim, p.225, about 150 families, the "notables" of Kuwait, formed the electorate.

to the People's Legislative Council (al-Majlis al-Umah al-Tashri'i) was organized.[77] There were a total of fourteen representatives elected to the new Council. They were:[78]

Shiyan al-Ghanim
Abdullah al-Hamad al-Saqr
Yusif bin 'Issa al Qina'i
al-Sayid 'Ali al-Sayid Sulayman
Yusif Marzuq al-Marzuq
Salih al-'Uthman
Mish'an al-Khudayir al-Khalid
Abdul Latif Muhammad al-'Uthman
Sulayman Khalid al-Adsani
Yusif Salih al-Humayd
Muhammad al-Dawud al-Marzuq
Sultan Ibrahim
Mishari Hasan al-Badr
Khalid al-'Abd al-Latif Muhammad

---

[77] al-Jasim, pp.224-227. See also Khalid Suleiman al-Adsani, *Nisf 'Am lil Hukm al-Niyabi fi al-Kuwayt* (Half a Year of Parliamentary Rule in Kuwait (published 1947 without further publication information. The author was secretary to the Legislative Council, and in this work gives a detailed account of the Council's formation and functioning during the brief period of its existence. On pp.5-6, he gives details of British involvement in the Council's formation.

[78] al-Jasim, p.225. Shiyan al-Ghanim resigned due to family circumstances and was replaced by Muhammad bin Shahin al-Ghanim on the basis of the number of votes.

The first order of business of the new Council was the preparation of the law delineating their powers and responsibilities. The Amir at first refused to sign this law, explaining that while he agreed with its contents, he considered that its implementation should be gradual. In response, the Council sent the Amir the following letter:[79]

> Your Highness: The Legislative Council today presented to you a law explaining the basic authority of the People's Council which was unanimously agreed upon by the members of the Council. We learned from Sheikh Abdullah Salim [Chairman of the Council] of your discussion with him when he brought the law to you for your signature. Frankly, we . . . feel that your response is not satisfactory. Your Highness stated that you are in agreement with the law, but you feel that we should gradually work to implement it. For that reason you saw no reason to sign it at the present time. To answer the queries of Your Highness, we wish to inform you that all the members of the Council . . . are dissatisfied with these verbal declarations. Under the circumstances in which you took over the throne you promised to make the rule between you and the nation Shura [consultative]. But as time has passed the nation has not witnessed the achievement of this promise. The deputies of the nation, Your Highness, when they firmly determined to serve the nation and the country were serious, not kidding, and are not reluctant; they swore there will be no obstacles, whatever they may be, between them and their service to the nation. This moment may be one of the most decisive moments in the history of our country. We

---

[79] Text of letter from al-Adsani, p.10.

> either [march forward] to prosperity, with you leading your people surrounded by glory, appreciation and love from every side, or the opposite. That is what we are: ready to meet every expected possibility--united on the side of the country, undaunted and unconquerable. At this moment when we submit to you our letter, we all stand together awaiting your decisive written affirmation. We ask God to help us all for whatever is the best.

Faced with this determination, the Amir signed the law on July 2, 1938. In effect constituting a constitution, the law gave the People's Legislative Council far-reaching powers, as indicated by its five articles:[80]

We, the Ruler of Kuwait, in accordance with the decision of the People's Legislative Council, approve this law on the authority of the Council and We have ordered its execution.

Article 1: The people are the source of authority represented in the person of its elected deputies.

Article 2: The Legislative Council must legislate the following laws:

1. The Budget Law, which organizes all the income of the country and its expenditure and directs it in a just manner, with the exception of the private property of al-Sabah which the Council has no right to interfere with.
2. The Law of Justice, and what is meant by this here is the religious and traditional laws where a system will be prepared for them in order to secure justice among people.

---

[80] Text from al-Adsani, pp.11-12.

3. General Security, and what is meant by this is the maintenance of security inside the country and outside to the furthest borders.

4. The Law of Education, and what is meant by this is the enactment of a law for education, following in it the example of the advanced countries.

5. The Law of Health, and what is meant by this is the enactment of a health law which protects the country and its people from the dangers of sickness and disease of whatever kind.

6. The Law of Construction; this includes the pavement of roads outside the city and the building of prisons, digging wells, and whatever may help in building the country internally and externally.

7. The Law of Emergency, and what is meant by this is the enactment of a law in the country for the occurrence of unexpected events. The authority is authorized to execute all the necessary laws needed to protect the security of the country.

8. The enactment of every other law which the interest of the country requires.

Article 3: The People's Legislative Council is the source of all treaties and internal and external concessions and agreements, and whatever is initiated in this respect will not be considered legal except with the agreement of the Council and its supervision.

Article 4: Since the country has no appeal courts, the duties of that court will be given to the People's Legislative Council until the formation of an independent body for this purpose.

Article 5: The Chairman of the People's Legislative Council represents the executive authority in the country.

The formation of the People's Legislative Council represented the ascendance to power of bourgeois interests in Kuwait--that class of capitalist interests that had been most affected by the closure of commerce with Najd and the economic decline of the thirties. The legislation issued by the Council over the several months of its existence concentrated on the reform of customs and taxes to facilitate the expansion of local commerce and the increase of the buying power of the local and hinterland market, the abolishment of monopolies that inhibited free competition, and the organization of public finances to facilitate public services to free enterprise. All of the reforms undertaken by the Council, in fact, reflect the bourgeois ideology of free enterprise in a system of law and order.[81]

Nevertheless, the People's Legislative Council represented a progressive expression of autonomous capitalism in Kuwait. Infected with the euphoria of nationalism and seeking the expansion of markets, the bouregeois interests were ultimately in contradiction with the relations of production of dependent capitalism. By constricting the Amir's perogatives and reducing Sabah power to control the economy, the Council significantly reduced the basis of Britain's hold on Kuwait. This had immediate implications in the areas of foreign affairs and oil concessions which, by Article 3 of the law, came under the Council's jurisdiction.

---

[81] See al-Adsani, pp.13-39, for a detailed account of the legislation passed by the Council.

Under this circumstance, confrontation between the Council and the representatives of dependent capitalism in Kuwait--represented by the Amir and the British Political Agent--was inevitable, in spite of the Council's efforts to minimize tension. For example, although the Council established for the first time in Kuwait's history a distinction between the privy purse and public budget, it allotted 76 per cent of total public revenues to salaries for the royal family and its entourage.[82] Furthermore, it attempted to assuage British fears that the Council would abrogate agreements between the Amir of Kuwait and Britain, and on October 29, 1938, sent through the Amir the following letter to the British Resident in the Gulf:[83]

> Reference is made to your letter of October 20, 1938, which had enclosed with it the transcript of your speech to the Legislative Council. In reference to my letter to you of October 11, it is important that I clarify the following:
>
> 1) After I issued my decree of July 2, 1939, in the form of a law on the authority of the People's Legislative Council, it became evident that by its first article "the nation is the source of authority represented in the form of its elected deputies." It became evident,

---

[82] al-Adsani, p.26.

[83] Text of letter from al-Adsani, pp.43-44.

> then, that the country began operating in accordance with a law in a parliamentary fashion. In order for all orders, laws and agreements in the name of the Government of Kuwait to become legitimate and accepted, they must have the approval of the said Council in a formal session.
>
> 2) The members of the committee which was delegated from the said Council who met with me, Your Excellency, Sheikh Abdullah Salim and Captain de Gaury [Political Agent] explained to me that the Council, after receiving the summaries of discussions which took place at that meeting, decided the following:
>
> a) The Council depends greatly on Sheikh Ahmed al-Jabir al-Sabah's continuation as the Supreme Head of the State. In order to ease communication between His Majesty's British Government and the Government of Kuwait without infringing upon the authority given to the People's Legislative Council in accordance with His Highness' decree dated July 2, 1938, it elected after previous discussion with Captain de Gaury two of its members to become the communications means between His Highness and the Council.
>
> b) Till now, the Council is convinced that there is no intention of making any new changes of any sort neither from His Majesty's British Government nor from the Government of Kuwait on relations and agreements between the two governments in accordance with the treaties and agreements previously signed between the present Ruler or previous rulers.
>
> c) The Council is convinced of the importance and the advantages of friendship and British support which will always continue to be the aim of the Legislative Council in all political affairs.

From al-Adsani's perspective, the letter was a verification of the Council's "care in maintaining English-

Kuwaiti relations" without surrendering "rights previous Kuwaiti rulers did not recognize."[84] Al-Jasim commented, however, that "it wasn't long before Britain showed its sorrow over the existence of the Council and the role it played."[85] The letter, in fact, affirmed the Council's determination to exercise sovereignty, and British support for the Council vis-a-vis the Amir was considerably dampened.[86]

In December 1938 an open confrontation between the Amir and the Council resulted in the Council barricading itself in the Palace of Nayif, a store for arms. The Amir summoned the tribes to his support, and the palace was surrounded. In return for their peaceful surrender, the Amir guaranteed the safety of the Council members and the integrity of their property. The People's Legislative Council was dissolved only six months after its creation, and the principal nationalist organization, the Shabiba

---

[84] al-Adsani, p.44.

[85] al-Jasim, p.235.

[86] For a discussion of the frictions which arose between the Council and the Amir on one hand, and the Council and the British on the other, see al-Jasim, pp.235-245.

Club, was suppressed.[87]

Nationalist sentiment in Kuwait was still very strong, however. Responding to this, within several days of dissolving the Council, the Amir called a new election. Twelve members of the old Council were re-elected. The ruler introduced to the new Council a new constitution, one which gave him absolute veto powers. The Council rejected it. In this tense situation, a Kuwaiti, just returning from Iraq, gave an inflamed nationalist, anti-government speech. He was arrested, and when some of his supporters attempted to free him, they were shot. The nationalist was then summarily executed, and many others jailed. As a result, many nationalists fled Kuwait to Iraq, and the movement for reform and representative government ended.[88]

---

[87] See Dickson, Appendix 3. Al-Adsani, pp.22-23, notes that the club, called Nadi Qutlat al-Shabab al-Watani (club of the Nationalist Youth Bloc) had 200 members. "The fruit of this bloc was carried through the seeding of nationalist feeling in the hearts of 200 youth who divided themselves into committees and groups to serve the existing movement by propagating the . . . Arab spirit among the general public and teaching illiterates the basics of reading and writing . . . in free night classes."

[88] For details of this confrontation, see H.R.P. Dickson, "An Account of the Political Situation in Kuwait, 1938,' Dickson's Private Papers, St. Antony's College, Oxford.

Oil: The New Integration

The re-assertion of autocracy in Kuwait just prior to the initiation of the Second World War brought the inter-war period of Kuwaiti political development full circle. During the war the active nationalist movement in Iraq was suppressed by British occupation of the country. But Kuwait was pacified without the necessity of direct intervention. While the country suffered immense deprivation during the war, following it the autocracy gained a new basis of political and economic power as a result of the initiation of oil wealth. The role of a crude oil supplier to the industrial world had been the basis of a new integration of Kuwait into the world division of labour emerging during the inter-war period. It was the strategic importance of this new basis of integration, in fact, that resulted in the forceful re-assertion of the relations of production of dependent capitalism in Kuwait.

Around the turn of the century the British Navy began developing oil fueled ships. By 1907, it had developed the first wholly oil fueled flotilla of ocean-going destroyers and was pursuing the transition of the entire naval fleet to oil fuel. In addition, oil was increasingly being utilized to fuel the engines of industry. From the turn of the century, then, secure sources of oil became an increasing strategic concern of the British Government. Prior to the First World War, in fact, British oil companies, backed by the power of the British Government, were securing vast oil concessions in the Middle East, and the entire region took on a new strategic importance in the competitive imperialist framework of the time.[89]

It was during this period of competitive capitalism that Britain secured a commitment from Mubarak that "we shall never give a concession in this matter to anyone except a person appointed from the British Government."[90] The entire record of the complex oil concession negotiations which started in 1923 and culminated in the 1934 agreement has been compiled in Chisholm's book, *The First Kuwait Oil Concession*. The important point to be made here is that the entire negotiations were carried on personally by Sheikh Ahmed al-Jabir. Both in these negotiations and the concession finally adopted,[91] the territory of Kuwait and the remunerations from the concession were treated as the private property of the Sheikh. Furthermore, the concession was for the whole of Kuwait, and gave exclusive rights to the Kuwait Oil Company (KOC, an American-British consortium) for oil exploration and exploitation in Kuwait territory.

---

[89] There is a substantial body of scholarly literature on the Middle East oil concessions. Several of the major works in this area include: George Lenczowski, *Oil and State in the Middle East* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1960); Stephen H. Longrigg, *Oil in the Middle East: Its Discovery and Development* (erd ed.; London: Oxford University Press, 1972); Muhammad A. Mughraby, *Permanent Sovereignty Over Oil Resources: A Study of Middle East Oil Concessions and Legal Concessions* (Beirut: Middle East Research and Publishing Center, 1966).

[90] Mubarak to Political Resident in the Gulf, October 27, 1913, in A.H.T. Chisholm, *The First Kuwait Oil Concession: A Record of the Negotiations for the 1934 Agreement* (London: Frank Cass, 1975), p.89.

KOC drilled its first well in 1936, but oil was not discovered until 1938 at the Burgan field (which was to prove one of the largest oil deposits in the world). However, the Second World War interrupted production, and the KOC shut down its operations completely. It was not until 1946 that the first oil was exported from Kuwait.

With the initiation of its role as an oil-exporter to the industrial world, the forces of production in Kuwait underwent rapid transformation. How this transformation has affected the framework of the relations of production of dependent capitalism, a framework established in the historic era of the underdevelopment of Kuwait, is examined in Part 2.

---

[91] Complete text of Concession in Chisholm, pp.242-249.

PART II:

POST-OIL KUWAIT

CHAPTER V:

THE NEW INTEGRATION:

THE CONTINUITY OF DEPENDENCY

The process of the underdevelopment of Kuwait throughout the first half of the 20th Century was examined in Chapter IV in terms of the transformation of the relations of production from autonomy to dependency and the consequent integration of Kuwait into the emerging world capitalist division of labour. The framework of contradictions established by the transformation-integration process--capital accumulation/expropriation and independence/dependence--resulted in the limitation on the development of productive forces beyond the scope of Kuwait's integration into the world division of labour as a pearling center. The effective result was the concentration of capital and homogenization of labour in a productive system that by the end of the inter-war period was no longer able to provide subsistence to the majority of the population.

The new integration of Kuwait as a major oil supplier to the industrial nations, however, radically transformed the basis of production and the level of surplus realized. Nevertheless, this integration was established in the framework of the continuity of dependent relations of production. This chapter will examine the continuity of dependency in the capital-surplus society.

The Changing Structure of Autocracy

The transition to the new basis of integration in the world division of labour was made within the framework of the continuity of autocracy in Kuwait, but the structure of autocracy has undergone progressive modification. Sheikh Ahmed al-Jabir died in 1950, and was succeeded by his cousin, Abdullah al-Salim. Abdullah al-Salim had been an active supporter of the reform movement in the inter-war period; and throughout his reign (1950-1965) he attempted to lessen the more oppressive aspects of autocracy in Kuwait. Youth associations were allowed to open; a local press emerged as the active medium for political debate; elections were organized for important administrative councils; and the foundations of the welfare state initiated. However, the expression of nationalism in the liberalized political atmosphere proved threatening to dependency, and the youth associations and press were banned and the elections to the administrative councils annulled in February 1959.[1]

---

[1] al-Khususi, pp.98-99.

In this period, Kuwait was still under the British protectorate. And under British guidance, it moved toward full independence. In June 1961, Kuwait and Britain signed a Treaty of Independence[2] terminating the 1889 Exclusive Agreement, giving Kuwait formal independence as a sovereign independent state, and guaranteeing British military assistance if the Amir requested it. Within a month Kuwait joined the Arab League, and in 1963 became a member of the United Nations.

In December 1961, a Constituent Assembly was created to draft a constitution. The constitution was signed by the Amir on November 11, 1962, and on January 23, 1963, Kuwait held a general election to the newly created 50-member National Assembly. All male citizens 21 years and over were eligible to vote. All literate male citizens 30 years and over were eligible to run for election. Political parties were banned, and candidates ran on independent platforms, competing for one of five seats within each of ten electoral districts. About 210 candidates ran in the election.[3]

---

[2] For text of treaty, see Husain M. Albaharna, The Arabian Gulf States: Their Legal and Political Status and Their International Problems (2nd ed.; Beirut: Librairie Du Liban, 1974), Appendix XI.

[3] Kuwait Today: A Welfare State (Kuwait: Ministry of Guidance and Information, n.d.), p.53.

The new constitution[4] designated Kuwait as a hereditary Amirate, and limited succession to the descendants of Mubarak. The Amir was declared immune and his person inviolable. The Heir Apparent, nominated by the Amir and approved by a simple majority of the National Assembly, must be designated within one year of the accession of a new Amir.

The constitution divided government into executive, legislative and judicial functions. Executive powers were vested in the hands of the Amir, as the Head of State, and a responsible Council of Ministers who were appointed and dismissed by the Amir. Legislative powers were shared by the Amir and the National Assembly, which was to be elected every four years. The size of the Council of Ministers could not exceed one-third of the number of deputies, but all save one member of the Council could be selected from outside the National Assembly. Members of the Council of Ministers sat in the National Assembly as ex-officio members. The Prime Minister (always the Crown Prince by tradition), a minister without portfolio appointed by the Amir, served as President of the Council of Ministers, and liason between the Amir and the National Assembly. A vote of no confidence against the Prime Minister was not allowed, but a vote of no confidence was allowed against other ministers. If the National Assembly could not cooperate with the Prime Minister, the Ruler could either appoint a new Prime Minister or dissolve the National Assembly and call a new election.

---

[4] Complete text of Constitution in Abid A. Al-Marayati (ed.), Middle Eastern Constitutions and Electoral Laws (New York: Praeger, 1968), pp.200-229.

Although technically all legislation must be approved by a two-thirds vote of the Assembly, in actuality the Assembly's legislative powers were significantly curtailed by the powers of the Amir. The cabinet essentially constituted one-third of the votes of the Assembly. Furthermore, in addition to his executive powers, the Amir had the right to initiate, sanction and promulgate laws, and to rule by decree when the Assembly was not in session.. In fact, no law could be promulgated by the Assembly unless sanctioned by the Amir, and the Amir could dissolve the Assembly at will. Also, although disposition of the state's financial resources resided with the Assembly, this was based on recommendations by the Council of Ministers.

The Executive. The functions of the National Assembly, then, were effectively constrained and real power resided with the Amir and his cabinet. These posts circulated among the ruling family, trusted supporters of the ruling family, and members of the pre-oil dominant class.[5] In fact, the Council of Ministers has provided the mechanism for bringing into direct government participation and post-oil economic organization members of the pre-oil dominant class. The extent to which the pre-oil elite has actually participated in government and is integrated into the modern economic structure is indicated in Table 4, below.

---

[5] See Appendix IV, for the membership of the successive cabinets, eight in all since 1962.

Table 4 shows that all but one of the seven families identified by Dickson (on the basis of his many years of intimate association with Kuwait) as the most prominent families served in the 1921 Consultative Council, and five of these served in the 1938 People's Legislative Council. Furthermore, members of all but two of these families of Dickson's list, except the one that participated in neither the 1921 nor 1938 Council, are members of the boards of the major shareholding companies.

Of the five families of the 1921 Council that were not included in Dickson's list, only one served on the 1938 Council, and only one other has ever been a member of a cabinet. From this group, membership on boards of the major shareholding companies is much less than Dickson's list, and two of them are not members at all.

Finally, of the six families in the 1937 Council that were neither on Dickson's list nor the 1921 Council, only members of two of the families have ever held a cabinet post. And only one family from this group, one that has

Table 4:

Participation of Pre-Oil Elites in Cabinets and Major Shareholding Corporations

Elites	Basis of Identification Dickson (a)	1921 Council	1938 Council	Number of Cabinet Posts Held	Members of Board Capital*	Industrial
al-Khalid	x	2	1	4	1	3
al-Zayyid**	x	1	1	5	4	4
al-Sayif***	x	1	-	-	1	1
al-Badr	x	1	1	-	-	1
al-Jalil (Nisf)	x	-	-	5	-	-
al-Saleh****	x	1	1	7	5	7
al-Saqar	x	1	1	1	5	4
al-Mutayri	-	1	-	-	2	-
al-Naqib	-	1	-	-	-	-
al-Rushayd	-	1	-	-	-	1
al-Humadhi	-	1	1	-	-	1
Mudhif	-	1	-	1	-	-
Sulayman	-	-	1	-	-	-
al-Marzuq (al-Daoud)	-	-	2	4	5	3
al-Uthman	-	-	2	-	-	-
al-Adsani	-	-	1	-	2	-
al-Ibrahim	-	-	1	-	-	-
Muhammed	-	-	1	-	-	-

*Includes banks and investment companies; See Appendix IV for details

**Branches of the family include al-Ghanim and al-Qutami

***Branches of the family include Ibn al-Rumi and al-Shamlan

****Branches of the family include Jan'aat, al-'Issa, al-Mutawa, al-Sultan, Qina'i.

(a) From Dickson, Kuwait and Her Neighbours, p.41.

also held cabinet posts, has also held a board post.

Dickson's list, then, reflects a high degree of continuity with the 1921 and 1938 Councils, and by itself is the best predictor of subsequent participation in both the cabinets and in the shareholding companies. The shareholding companies form only a minor portion of business enterprise in Kuwait, comprising only 95 of the 19,357 operating establishments in 1973.[6] Nevertheless, shareholding companies essentially reflect investment and speculative capital, particularly in the seventies with the onset of the international monetary crisis. The financial structure will be discussed later in the chapter. The point to be made here is that participation in shareholding companies is not inclusive of the economic elite; however, it does provide a strong indicator of the core of that elite. Taken together with Dickson's list, participation in the shareholding companies reflects the high degree of integration of the pre-oil elite in the post-oil elite politico-economic structure.

To what extent does participation in the cabinet correlate with membership on the boards of major shareholding companies? This is indicated in Table 5, below, which lists the family names that appear on three or more boards of the major shareholding companies.

---

[6] Central Statistical Office, Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, (Kuwait: Ministry of Planning, 1977), p.102.

Table 5:

Families That Hold Membership on Three or More Boards of Major Shareholding Corporations

Family Names	Number of Cabinet Posts Held	Members of Boards	
		Capital*	Industrial
al-Khalid	4	1	3
al-Zayyid**	6	4	4
al-Saleh***	7	5	7
al-Saqr	1	5	4
al-Marzuq	4	5	3
Ghunaym	1	3	2
al-Sha'i	2	2	1
al-Fulaij	2	5	2
al-Kazimi	2	5	1
al-Nafisi	2	3	1
al-Hamad	1	4	2
al-Bahar	-	7	3
al-Khorafi	-	3	4
al-Rashed	-	1	2
al-Mishari	-	1	3
Behbehani	-	3	3

*Includes banks and investment companies; see Appendix IV for details

**Branches of the family include al-Ghanim and al-Qutami

***Branches of the family include al-'Issa, al-Mutawa, al-Sultan, and Qina'i.

The above table indicates the close correspondence between ministerial participation and membership on boards of major shareholding companies. If participation on three or more boards of governors is somewhat arbitrarily used as an indicator of high participation in the councils of financial power, Table 5 reveals that eleven of the total sixteen names that appear on three or more boards of directors have also participated in cabinets at one time or another between 1962 and 1975. Furthermore, five of the eleven who have participated in the cabinet are names identified in Table 4. However, there are a total of twenty-one names that appeared on cabinet between 1962 and 1975 that were not given in Table 4 (i.e., they were not identified in any of the criteria of pre-oil elite). Of these, six appear in Table 5, while five of the names in Table 5 have never been on cabinet. Thus, the nature of the correspondence between cabinet posts and membership on boards is not straightforward. Nevertheless, it does indicate a close correspondence between the highest posts of political power and the highest council's of finance.

The National Assembly. The National Assembly was envisioned as a rubber stamp for policies set forth by the ruling class as embodied in the executive. However, the National Assembly emerged with a stronger spirit of independence than its architects envisioned. Although political parties were prohibited, a strong opposition bloc developed almost immediately.[7] This bloc reflected the strength of Arab nationalist sentiment in Kuwait. In April 1963, for example, when Syria and Iraq joined President

---

[7] Stanford Research Institute, Area Handbook for the Peripheral States of the Arabian Peninsula (n.p.: The American University, 1971), p.III.

Nasser's United Arab Republic, twelve deputies of the National Assembly demanded abrogation of the Kuwait-British defense treaty and the joining of Kuwait to the Republic.[8]

The opposition bloc continued to emerge in subsequent elections--1967, 1971 and 1975--in spite of efforts to gerrymander the electoral districts (geographical not population areas) to increase tribal bloc voting and defeat nationalist candidates.[9] Chief issues of the opposition centered on the nature of the oil concessions and the dominance of the oil companies in Kuwait and the Arab world, Kuwait's close alliance with Britain and the United States, and Kuwait's conservative role in the Arab world.[10] In the 1975 election, the increasing political consciousness of the electorate--a larger, more literate electorate than in any of the previous elections[11]--was reflected in the emergence of election platforms around various groupings and blocs.[12] In spite of the fact that the new Assembly was considered more traditional and conservative than any of the previous ones,[13] it launched a more vigorous attack on government policies which centered more specifically on class issues than before--particularly the growing gap between a small wealthy class and the rest of the population. The opposition had strong support from the press and the public. In August 1976 the government dissolved the Assembly, suspended the Constitution, and introduced restrictions on the press.

---

[8] Kuwait Today, p.53.

[9] See, for example, Ibrahim Abu-Nab, "The Lamp is Still Burning in the Gulf," al-Hawadith (Beirut), January 24, 1975, pp.30-31, who discusses the effect of the geographical delineation of electoral districts on voting patterns.

[10] The role of the opposition in the National Assembly is fully revealed in the Kuwait weekly newspaper, al-Tali'ah, 1963-1976, which was the principal organ for the expression of opposition views. For a concise review of the Assembly's history of opposition, see Middle East Annual Review, 1977 (Essex: The Middle East Economic Review, 1978), p.215.

The Changing Structure of Peripheral Integration

Kuwait's new integration as an oil producer was made by the linkage with monopoly capital in the form of oil corporations. The Kuwait Oil Company (KOC), which accounts for over 90 per cent of oil production in Kuwait, was founded as a joint Gulf Oil and British Petroleum (BP) venture--two of the "majors" or "seven sisters" of oil which include Exxon (Standard Oil of New Jersey), Mobil (Standard Oil of New York), Chevron (Standard Oil of California), Texaco and Shell.[14] These "seven sisters" were fully integrated corporations that not only controlled production of Middle East Oil but also all downstream operations. Their collusive arrangement, known as the Red Line Agreement, had been instituted to limit the supply of oil on world markets by determining which areas were to be exploited and which areas were to be reserved for future exploitation.[15]

---

[11] The increasing size and literacy of the electorate (males 21 years and over) was a function of the age structure of the population and the expansion of education initiated in 1954. These will be discussed in other chapters.

[12] See, for example, "Charter of the Congress of Democratic Liberals," al-Ra'i al-'Amm (Kuwait), June 8, 1974, pp.17-18. This was one of the four main non-tribal, non-sectarian groups that emerged in the 1975 election, and the Charter reflects generally the main areas of issue of these nascent political parties.

[13] Middle East Annual Review, 1977, p.215.

In Kuwait, production began in 1946 under terms fairly typical of the period: BP and Gulf determined the quantities KOC produced, where these would be sold and the price paid. Kuwait received a fixed royalty of 12.5 per cent of the posted price--the value of oil at the well-head which reflected more its cost of production than market value. Over the period 1946 to 1951 this yielded to Kuwait a total revenue of about $42 million.[16]

---

[14] See Anthony Sampson, The Seven Sisters: The Great Oil Companies and the World They Made (New York: The Viking Press, 1975).

[15] Ibid., pp.67-68.

By 1951, the Kuwait Government had begun to reassess its position, and while not altering the structure of relations with KOC, insisted that KOC be subject to a corporate income tax of an amount equal to 50 per cent of the net sales price minus the production costs and royalties. The United States had made provisions that such taxes be deductible as a credit from United States income taxes. A similar arrangement in Britain, plus the fact that Kuwait had just granted a concession in the Kuwait/Saudi Arabia Neutral Zone to the American Independent Oil Company (AMINOIL) under the new terms, all contributed to KOC's willingness to accept the new deal. Revenues to the government were $56 million in 1952 alone.[17]

Despite this gain in receipts, Kuwait remained dissatisfied with the level of production determined solely by KOC in terms of market considerations. The government hoped to increase production to some degree and establish some control over production levels, by establishing other concessionaires within the country. A step in this direction was taken with the admittance of AMINOIL, and further steps through the fifties involved the Arabian Oil Company (Japan) Ltd. (AOC) and the Kuwait Shell Development Company. Both of these corporations were to include a degree of government participation, with Kuwait acquiring a ten per cent share of AOC and an option for 20 per cent of the Shell operation.[18] However, a more significant development was an agreement reached in 1955 with KOC calling for it to relinquish 50 per cent of its original concession area. This was not a nationalization of oil-producing property, but rather involved undeveloped lands which were to be operated by a nationally-controlled corporation--the Kuwait National Petroleum Company (KNPC). KNPC officially began in 1960 with the government owning 50 per cent of the equity. To this day it has not been involved in large-scale production, restricting its scope to refining, and purchasing its feedstocks from KOC.[19]

---

[16] The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development, The Economic Development of Kuwait (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965), p.33.

[17] *Ibid.*, p.23.

The 'fifties came to a close with a number of developments changing the nature of the oil market. A world surplus was emerging, and competition from a number of the smaller independent concessionaires, who had been welcomed into most producing nations under a divide-and-conquer philosophy regarding dealings with foreign corporations, was beginning to force price erosion. In August 1960, the majors announced a reduction in the posted price of Middle East crude, and began enthusiastic development in countries where tax and royalty structures remained strongly in their favor.[20] Reaction from the Middle East was rapid, with Kuwait, Iraq, Iran and Saudi Arabia joining the formation of OPEC in September. Their sole purpose at that time was to maintain government revenues by either a restoration of the price or a change in the royalty/tax arrangement.

---

[18] The Planning Board, The First Five Year Development Plan 1967-68 - 1971-72 (Kuwait: State of Kuwait, 1968), p.25.

[19] Ibid., pp.24-25.

Up to this time Kuwait had been fairly successful in attaining short-term objectives regarding oil. Throughout the post-war period world demand increased rapidly, the industry was extremely profitable, and the majors had a fairly cooperative attitude from the governments of producing countries. The changes that had occurred just prior to 1960 had caused this attitude to change considerably. OPEC found opposition to be quite severe, and the members were relatively unsuccessful throughout the decade. KOC remained very powerful and dominated the industry in

---

[20] P. R. Odell, Oil and World Power: Background to the Oil Crisis (4th ed.; London: Pelican Books, 1975), p.18.

Kuwait, granting periodic increases to government revenues of a few cents per barrel. The extent of its power was revealed in 1968, when, amidst a growing feeling of nationalism, the Kuwaiti newspaper, al-Tali'ah, ran an article accusing KOC of acting as the de facto government.[21] Following this, the newspaper was closed down for a year by Ministerial decree.

However, KOC's position was at a height never again to be enjoyed. The formation of the Organization of Arab Petroleum Exporting Countries (OAPEC) and the events of the 1967 Arab-Israeli War were significant markers of the beginning of a new period of relationships between Gulf countries and oil companies. By 1969 Kuwait and her neighbours were solidly behind an assault on the concessionary terms--terms which had become intolerable to the most conservative governments of the area.

The oil market itself had significantly changed from the surplus situation of the 'fifties and 'sixties. By the early seventies, world consumption of oil had increased so dramatically that demand threatened to outpace supply. In this situation, it was a supplier's market, and during the first three years of the seventies the countries acquired the right to significant control in the determination of prices. Most established further claims on control of production through either direct participation or outright nationalization. Because of the threat of oil shortages, a fragmentation of interests had developed among the oil companies themselves, and a much greater diversity of interests existed among consuming nations, who were anxious that future needs be supplied with a high degree of security. The political implications of oil were becoming increasingly important as the world entered 1973, and consuming nations were keenly aware that while the producers were unable to determine among themselves exact levels of production in each country, at least the OAPEC members would cooperate in the ultimate decision as to whether production would take place at all.[22]

---

[21] al-Tali'ah (Kuwait), October 30, 1968, p.3.

Concessions were made therefore to discourage Gulf nations from even voicing the threat implicit in their bargaining position. The world was fairly optimistic in early 1973 that stability in the oil market had been achieved, and the New York Times reported in April that "there [was] little likelihood of even a partial boycott of sales to Western allies of Israel unless there [was] a renewal of Arab-Israel conflict on a large scale."[23]

---

[22] For an examination of the impact of the changing oil market in this period, and the intense consumer competition which strengthened the bargaining position of the producing nations, see Tareq Y. Ismael, "Oil: The New Diplomacy," in Tareq Y. Ismael, The Middle East in World Politics: A Study in Contemporary International Relations (Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1974), pp.226-239.

The Arab-Israeli conflict, however, was already fomenting. In May 1973 Kuwait was among four Arab countries which staged a "symbolic protest against Israel's continuing existence" by stopping the flow of oil supplies to the West for a 24-hour period.[24] This action was a demonstration of Kuwait's willingness to close production "the moment the battle against Israel began."[25] Over the summer, a maximum ceiling was placed on oil production. In September, the Kuwaiti Ambassador to the United States, Salem al-Sabah, outlined the reasons for this move as being associated with restricted present development opportunities as well as international investment outlets, an uncomfortable international monetary situation, and a concern for the needs of future Kuwaiti generations. He added that "nowadays . . . the flag and interest follow trade . . . politics may play a role since Kuwait is an

---

[23] New York Times, April 16, 1973, p.28.

[24] New York Times, May 16, 1973, p.1.

[25] Ibid.

Arab country . . . it's quite natural that we do not want our oil to participate in oiling the Israeli war machine."[26]

In a speech to the National Assembly in October 1973, the Crown Prince and Prime Minister Dabir al-Ahmed al-Sabah, acting on behalf of the Amir, outlined the government's initiative on oil pricing:[27]

> It was necessary to reconsider Agreements within the framework of future relations between Kuwait and the oil companies operating in Kuwait . . . . If the companies do not respond, the government will take measures to preserve its oil wealth. In view of the consistent rise in prices of all raw materials, at an even higher rate than had been anticipated at the time of the signing of the Tehran agreement in 1972, . . . we decided without reference to the companies to raise the posted price of Kuwaiti oil by seventy percent as from October 16, 1973, and to adjust these prices in future in accordance with the dictates of national interest and the conditions of the oil markets.

KOC, in which the Kuwaiti government had at this time no participation, regarded the action as a usurption of its rights, and the decision might well have been rendered ineffective had it been taken in isolation. However, on October 16, "sources reported that the Foreign

---

[26] Kuwait - Monthly Bulletin (Published by the Permanent Mission of the State of Kuwait to the United Nations), Vol. X, No. 2, September 1973.

[27] Kuwait - Monthly Bulletin, Vol. X, No. 5, December 1973.

Ministers of Saudi Arabia, Kuwait, Libya and Algeria . . . had asked to see President Nixon . . . . Arab diplomats reported that Kuwait would seek to stop shipments of her crude, estimated at 65,000 barrels a day, to the United States."[28] Two days later, "the long-awaited formal decision to use oil as a weapon in the Middle East conflict was announced at the end of an eight-hour meeting in Kuwait of Ministers of eleven countries. The monthly export-reduction was set at 5 per cent off each previous month's sales, starting with the level of sales in September."[29] This was not the consensus of action, however, as "four Persian Gulf oil producers--Kuwait, Qatar, Bahrain and Dubai--announced a total embargo of oil to the United States."[30]

The embargo lingered on in one form or another until March 18, 1975, when at a meeting in Vienna "most of the Arab oil countries announced officially . . . they would lift the embargo of oil shipments."[31] The removal of the embargo was explained accordingly:[32]

---

[28] New York Times, October 16, 1973, p.19.

[29] New York Times, October 18, 1973, p.l.

[30] New York Times, October 22, 1973, p.l.

[31] New York Times, March 14, 1974, p.l.

> It appeared to the Ministers that the American official policy . . . had assumed a new dimension vis-a-vis the Arab-Israeli conflict . . . . The Arab oil Ministers are aware of the fact that oil is a weapon which can be utilized in a positive manner in order to lead to results the effectiveness of which may surpass those if the oil weapon was used in a negative manner.

Nevertheless, Kuwait remained aggressive in pursuit of control over KOC. In 1973, the National Assembly had refused to ratify an agreement which called for a government minority share in the company; but in January 1974 a new agreement was reached between KOC and the government which gave Kuwait 60 per cent ownership. This was ratified in May and Kuwait acquired its share for a price just equal to the net book value--$112 million.[33]

Throughout 1974 the price of Kuwaiti oil was increased. Before the 29th General Assembly of the United Nations Kuwait explained that this was simply a reaction to the fact that:[34]

---

[32] Ibid., p.20.

[33] Middle East Annual Review 1975, p.166.

[34] Kuwait - Monthly Bulletin, Vol. XI, No. 4, November 1974.

> the companies, the interests they serve and the countries to which they belong, had deliberately frozen the price of oil at a very low level for more than a quarter of a century. Raising the price of oil was in essence the correction of an inequitable situation.

Kuwait continued to restrict output, lowering the ceiling to a maximum of just over two million barrels per day.[35] Such restrictions were hardly necessary, however, for the majors themselves were taking steps to limit the sales of nationally-controlled or wholly state-owned oil companies by working on the gap between the price of crude they bought-back from the producers at a tax-paid cost and the sale price of government participation crude. The latter was agreed to be not lower than 93 per cent of the posted price, which at first glance would give the national companies the advantage of being able to sell all they wished. The tax-paid cost on other crude was calculated on the basis of the posted price in such a manner so as to divide the profit (which was virtually all of the posted price) in a ratio of 60:40, with the company receiving the 40 per cent. As the posted price rose, the companies found that they could easily afford to lower their profit margin on buy-back crude, and produce quite profitably at a "cocktail" price which undercut any of the national companies. By summer 1974, with an actual surplus situation again developing in Middle East crude, the national companies found it almost impossible to make any direct sales to third parties at all.[36]

---

[35] Middle East Annual Review, 1975, p.161.

On November 10, 1974, three Arab oil-exporting countries, led by Saudi Arabia, lowered their oil price while sharply increasing the tax and royalties paid by the foreign companies. This was to have the effect of squeezing oil company margins and ensure a capture by the national companies of the market to third parties. However, Kuwait, Iran and Iraq argued that a change in the price structure could only be adopted by a full meeting of OPEC ministers, since pricing was the only genuine basis of agreement among OPEC members.[37] Kuwait preferred to move towards complete ownership of oil production, and this became the generally adopted Arab policy.

Kuwait acquired 100 per cent of KOC on September

---

[36] Middle East Economic Survey, Vol. XVIII, No. 4, November 15, 1974.

[37] New York Times, November 11, 1974, pp. 1, 5.

1, 1975.[38] The new arrangement, now also used by Saudi Arabia, calls for the government to put up all investment capital and be solely responsible for the management of the operation. The ex-concessionaires provide support services and personnel when requested, through the signing of long-term competitive contracts.[39] In Kuwait the companies involved became, quite naturally, Gulf and BP, and these two are allowed to purchase 500,000 and 450,000 barrels per day respectively at a flat fixed discount of fifteen cents per barrel.[40]

Currently Kuwait continues the policy of restrictions on production as a principal means of maintaining price. Further, the government argues that the real returns on oil be kept constant:[41]

> In the last 15 months or so, we estimate that the real price of oil has declined by, say, 25 per cent at least. This has been the result of the average rate of world inflation and the steady decline of the dollar which is still the main . . . means of payment for oil exports . . . . The only solution does in fact seem to be in linking the price of oil to some sort of price index.

---

[38] Middle East Economic Survey, Vol. XVIII, No. 4, November 15, 1974.

[39] Middle East Economic Survey, Vol. XIX, No. 30, May 17, 1976.

[40] Ibid.

[41] A. al-Hamad, Some Aspects of the Oil Controversy: An Arab Interpretation (Kuwait: Kuwait Fund for Arab Economic Development, 1974), p.6.

Oil and the Capital Surplus Economy

The changes in the structure of autocracy and peripheral integration that Kuwait has experienced over the period of its integration into the world division of labour as an oil producer are related to the level of capital surplus realized. From the mid-fifties, at least, Kuwait has been a capital surplus society. Between 1953 and 1961, the government realized K.D. 897.8 million from oil revenues.[42] Data for state expenditures in this period are not available. Table 6 shows the surplus realized from 1962 to 1977.

Table 6:

Actual State Revenues and Expenditures
(K.D. million), 1962/63-1976/77

	Revenues	Expenditures	Surplus Million K.D.	Surplus PerCent
1962/63 - 1964/65	619.4	523.7	95.7	15.4
1965/66 - 1967/68	808.8	852.0	-43.2	-5.3
1968/69 - 1970/71	918.1	853.9	64.2	7.0
1971/72 - 1973/74	1,519.9	1,355.0	164.9	10.8
1974/75 - 1976/77*	6,029.9	3,710.0	2,319.9	36.5

* Estimate

Source: Data for 1962/63 through 1970/71 from Statistical Abstract, 1972, p.187; government expenditures in 1971/72 from Statistical Yearbook of Kuwait, 1974, p.144; remaining data from Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.218-221.

---

[42] Central Statistical Office, Statistical Abstract, 1968 (Kuwait: The Planning Board, 1968), p.111.

The deficit reflected in the period 1965/66 was the result of decreases in the rate of increase in oil revenues in the 'sixties. Between 1953 and 1958, production increased by 67 per cent[43] and revenues by 112 per cent.[44] The more rapid rate in the increase of revenues was due to adjustments in terms of trade with KOC, as discussed earlier. By 1960, however, these had reached their limit within the framework of the concessions. Between 1960 and 1964, oil production increased by 61 per cent;[45] while revenues from 1960/61 through 1964/65 increased by only 30 per cent.[46] Thus, the relationship between increasing production and increasing revenues was essentially reversed in this period, and remained the same throughout the decade. Government expenditures, on the other hand, increased from K.D. 165.2 in 1962/63 to K.D. 285.5 in 1969/70,[47] a 73 per cent increase over the period.

---

[43] Central Statistical Office, Statistical Abstract, 1972 (Kuwait: Planning Board, 1972), p.156.

[44] Ibid., p.180.

[45] Ibid., p.156.

[46] Ibid., p.180.

[47] Ibid., p.187.

The struggle with the oil companies that culminated in state sovereignty over oil production by 1975 may be understood in terms of the class structure that resulted from the new integration of Kuwait as an oil producer. In the new integration, the basis of class power had been transformed from ownership of the means of production to ownership of the tributes of alienation--namely the oil revenues. Since all oil revenue accrued directly to the ruler under the terms of the concession, the executive in fact became the appropriator of the new wealth. Revenue allocation through ministries transformed the articulation of economic and political power, and transformed the basis of power from control over the means of production to control over the means of allocation. The relationship between government expenditures and non-petroleum gross domestic product (the value of all goods and services except crude petroleum and other mining and quarrying produced in Kuwait) is indicated in Table 7, below.

Table 7 reflects the dominant role of government expenditures in the economic activity of Kuwait. Because of rapid inflation in 1974, in fact, government expenditures in 1974/75 and 1975/76 actually exceeded GDP, contributing to the inflationary trend. Oil revenues are the major source of funds for financing of consumption and investment in the post-oil economy. What the table indicates is that the capture of public expenditure is the basis of private enterprise in Kuwait in the post-oil era. In this situation, the capture of public revenue became the focus of intra-class competition, in effect consolidating rather than fragmenting class cohesion behind the ruling family. Under the new integration the executive, represented by the ruler and his Council of Ministers, became the political superstructure of an economic infrastructure based upon alienation of sovereignty over the nation's resources.

Table 7:

Government Expenditure as a Percentage of Non-Petroleum Gross Domestic Product, 1966/67-1974/75 (in K.D. million)

	Expenditures	Non-Petroleum GDP	Percentage
1966/67	286	344	83.1
1967/68	344	398	86.4
1968/69	285	421	67.7
1969/70	311	432	72.0
1970/71	334	432	77.3
1971/72	382	515	74.2
1972/73	454	579	78.4
1973/74	474	665	71.3
1974/75	1,113	788	-41.2
1975/76	1,096	985	-11.2

Source: Expenditures for 1966/67 from *Statistical Abstract*, 1972, p.187; GDP and expenditures for 1967/68-1973/74 from *Statistical Yearbook of Kuwait, 1974*, pp.137, 144; GDP and expenditures for 1974/75-1975/76 from *Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977*, pp.209, 218-219.

As a capitalist class, the executive first struggled with the problem of increasing the rates of accumulation by increasing returns to the state from oil production. The next logical step (in terms of capitalist interests) was to gain control over the means of production themselves. Between 1971 and 1976, in fact, production decreased by 47 per cent, but revenues between 1971/72 and 1976/77 increased by 467 per cent.[48]

Throughout the struggle with the oil companies, the National Assembly spearheaded the attack on the oil companies, and because of inflamed Arab nationalist sentiment because of the Arab-Israeli conflict accelerated the process of gaining control over the means of production. However, once this was achieved and the oil companies could no longer provide a scapegoat for nationalist unrest, the National Assembly posed a threat to the class itself. For although the state had gained control over oil production, this had been achieved within the framework of dependency.

Under the impact of capital surplus, the mechanisms of expropriation have included both increasing rates of commodity imports from the Western capitalist nations and increasing rates of capital export. Between

---

[48] Central Statistical Office, Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977 (Kuwait: Ministry of Planning, 1977), p.221.

1954 and 1960, the value of Kuwait's annual imports increased from K.D. 29.9 million to K.D. 86.4 million, an increase of 189 per cent; and between 1961 and 1971, the value of annual imports increased by 161 per cent.[49] Between 1970/71 and 1975/76, the importation of goods and services increased from K.D. 240.6 million, to K.D. 737.3 million, a 206 per cent increase over a five year period. Kuwait's imports from Japan, the European Common Market and the United States between 1970 and 1975 accounted for about 68 per cent of the total value of imports.[50] In this period, the importation of consumption and intermediate goods accounted for over 70 per cent of total imports, while capital goods other than transport equipment has accounted for 15 per cent or less.[51]

Table 8, below, reflects the relative importance of different sectors in the expropriation of capital from Kuwait for the years 1966/67, 1970/71 and 1974/75.

Table 8 reflects both the increases in imports and capital transfers over the period 1966/67 to 1974/75. There was a 573 per cent increase in the rate of capital

---

[49] Statistical Abstract, 1972, p.247.

[50] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.295.

[51] Central Statistical Office, Annual Statistical Abstract, 1976 (Kuwait: Ministry of Planning, 1976), p.267.

Table 8:

Balance of Payments, 1966/67, 1970/71 and 1974/75 (in K.D. million)

Transactions	1966/67	1970/71	1974/75
Oil Sector			
Government Receipts	292.1	321.1	2,203.5
Expenditure of Oil Companies	23.3	27.8	25.0
Transactions of KNPC	-	2.4	140.8
Total	315.4	351.3	2,369.3
Other Current Transactions			
Exports, F.O.B.	14.5	26.4	130.5
Imports, C.I.F.	-176.1	-240.6	-552.6
Freight, Insurance, Travel	- 26.8	- 21.0	- 21.8
Investment Income	75.2	102.8	202.6
Total	-113.2	-132.4	-241.3
Balance of Current Transactions	202.2	218.9	2,128.0
Capital Transfer			
Government Transfers	- 15.3	- 40.9	-286.7
Current Private Transfers	- 2.8	-	- 75.0
Private Capital (Other)	-114.7	- 59.3	-532.6
Total	-132.8	-100.2	-894.3
Loans			
Government Loans (net)	- 5.5	4.5	16.7
KFAED loans	- 6.0	1.8	-145.0
Total	- 11.5	6.3	-128.3
Balance of Capital Transactions	-144.3	- 93.9	-1,022.6
Monetary Sector			
Net Commercial Banks Assets	- 62.0	- 24.5	23.3
Government Assets	4.1	-100.5	-1,138.1
Total	- 57.9	-125.0	-1,114.8

Source: Statistical Yearbook of Kuwait, 1976 p.183.

transfer between 1966/67 and 1974/75. In 1966/67, private capital made up 88 per cent of these transfers, but by 1974/75, government transfers had increased to 32 per cent. The most spectacular increase, however, was in government assets. Table 9, below, shows the substantial increase in Kuwait's foreign investments between 1970 and 1975, and the distribution of these investments by allocation of funds.

Table 9:

Kuwait Foreign Investments
1970 and 1975
(in K.D. million)

Allocations	1970	1975
Reserve Fund		
Government Organizations	113.9	395.6
International Organizations	9.4	169.2
Kuwait Investment Office (reserve)	41.8	290.0
American Shares and Bonds	52.4	536.7
Other Foreign Shares and Bonds	34.6	486.2
Local Shares	41.0	108.7
Local Loans and Deposits	78.1	249.4
Foreign Loans	119.9	98.2
Deposits in Foreign Banks	42.1	80.1
Real Estate	6.8	52.7
Other Accounts	0.8	-120.9
Total	540.7	2,345.8
Current Fund		
Kuwait Investment Office Current	7.3	63.0
Current Bank Accounts	2.4	0.1
Total	9.7	63.1
General Total	550.4	2,408.9

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.224.

From the mid-sixties, the intermediate position of Kuwait's dominant class between importation and local consumption was protected by law which required all businesses in Kuwait to be 51 per cent Kuwaiti. This provided the limits of nationalism of the peripheral capitalist class in the sixties when 75 per cent of Kuwait's surplus was absorbed in internal development, and the 25 per cent surplus went into reserves and foreign investments.[52] But the phenomenal increases in oil revenues in the seventies reversed the relationship between allocations to internal development and surplus.[53] In 1970, Kuwait's surplus in foreign transactions amounted to K.D. 339.7 million and comprised 29 per cent of the disposal of current receipts; by 1975, the surplus amounted to K.D. 1,939.2 million, and comprised 64 per cent of the disposal of current receipts.[54] After 1972, the export of financial capital emerged as a major industry in Kuwait.

The Financial Structure. The financial industry of Kuwait is comparatively young. Before the seventies, funds channelled outside Kuwait were mainly in the form of time deposits and loans, as reflected in Table 9. However, by the end of 1973, foreign investments had become the major outlet of the country's huge capital surplus. In December 1973, the Crown Prince and Prime Minister, Jabir al-Ahmad al-Sabah, outlined the foundations of a foreign investment policy as a means to gradually increase reserves by secure and rewarding investments of capital. He stressed that Kuwait should "distribute investments among various world markets and in various kinds of investments so as to achieve the highest yield with the minimum of risk."[55] Over the period 1973 to 1975, many new banks and investment corporations were established and began to actively engage in participation internationally, and to underwrite private issues on a world wide scale. By 1976, the banking and financial system of Kuwait comprised:[56]

---

[52] Middle East Economic Survey, Vol. XIX, No. 17, February 13, 1976, p.1.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.211.

1. The Central Bank of Kuwait, which executes all local and foreign business transactions for the government ministries and agencies.
2. Six commercial banks: four fully owned by the private sector; two jointly owned by the government and the private sector.

---

[55] Kuwait - Monthly Bulletin, Vol. X, No. 5, December 1973.

[56] Central Bank of Kuwait, Economic Report for 1976 (Kuwait: Central Bank of Kuwait, 1977), pp.42-62.

3. Three specialized banks: one privately owned; one jointly owned by the government and the private sector; and one fully owned by the government. The Credit and Savings Bank (government-owned) and the Real Estate Bank (private) provide financing mainly for real estate activities, and the Industrial Bank (joint sector) provides financing and technical assistance to the industrial sector.

4. Fifteen investment companies (most of which were established since 1972): two jointly owned by the government and private sector; the others fully owned by the private sector or by the private sector with foreign participation (not exceeding 49 percent). Twelve of the companies are closed corporations and the remainder are shareholding companies. The three shareholding companies - Kuwait Investment Company (joint sector), Kuwait International Investment Company (private) and Kuwait Foreign Trading, Contracting and Investment Company (joint sector) - held 92.5 percent of the assets of all investment companies and 97.3 percent of their total capital and reserves in 1976.

5. Several insurance companies, including three national companies, one re-insurance company, and a number of foreign companies operating through local agencies.

In the 'seventies, this financial structure has emerged as the major intermediary between accumulation in Kuwait and the central financial markets of the world by channelling a major part of local savings and surpluses outside the country. By 1976, the commercial banks had 38.6 per cent of total assets in foreign assets, the specialized banks had 35.0 per cent of total assets in foreign assets,[57] and the investment companies had 62 per cent of total assets in foreign assets.[58] It is especially through the investment companies, then, that the country's vast financial resources are funnelled into the world market.

The scope of operations of the investment industry in Kuwait was indicated by their activities. In 1975, for example, twenty-two bond issues totalling over half a billion dollars were managed by Kuwaiti investment companies, and there was participation in another thirty-nine issues, the total amount of which was not disclosed.[59] In 1976, the investment companies managed, co-managed and participated in issues totalling K.D. 2,411.8 million, a 41 per cent increase over 1975. Of this, K.D. 127 million were locally marketed. Furthermore, of the K.D. 2,411.8 million, about K.D. 81 million were marketed in Kuwaiti dinars, and K.D. 27 million were marketed for the benefit of Arab countries. The balance of the total issues was in foreign currencies: 60 per cent in U.S. dollars; 24.4 per cent in Deutsche mark; 9.7 per cent in Canadian dollars; and the remainder in other foreign currencies.[60]

---

[57] Ibid., pp.94-97.

[58] Ibid., p.61.

[59] Middle East Economic Survey, Vol. XIX, No. 17, February 13, 1976.

The major investment corporations are under the direction of the Ministry of Finance, which administers the bulk of the State's revenues in foreign exchange and which is the main provider and manager of funds. Over the past several years, the Ministry has established its own "efficient global network similar to the best of the old professional institutions."[61] The criteria of profitability is obviously met; Kuwait is earning as much as 15 per cent return on money in Europe.[62] In 1976, the government owned $14 billion in foreign assets, and private interests owned another $4 billion;[63] by 1978, the government's foreign assets had increased to $25 billion, divided about equally between equities and money market instruments, with two per cent of it in real estate.[64]

---

[60] Economic Report for Kuwait, 1976, p.62.

[61] Middle East Economic Review, 1975, p.77.

[62] Middle East Economic Survey, Vol. XIX, No. 17, February 13, 1976.

[63] Middle East Economic Digest, April 9, 1976.

[64] Financial Times (London), February 27, 1978, p.14.

Dependency and Class in the Capital Surplus Economy

Kuwait is a particular case of dependent capitalism--a case where the producing nations have achieved a monopoly over a resource that is vital to the economies of the industrialized nations. In this case, capital surplus rather than capital shortage is the effective result. Nevertheless, like other dependent nations, dependency in Kuwait is specified by its narrow specialized role in the world division of labour as an oil producer and the expropriation of capital from Kuwait to the centers of world capitalism. The narrow specialization is revealed by the role of crude oil in Kuwait's balance of payments, and expropriation is also revealed by the balance of payments which reflects the extent of flow out of capital. Because of the volume of capital involved, the flow out of the nation has taken the forms of foreign investments and surplus reserves in addition to ever increasing imports.

Kuwait's integration into the world division of labour is a function of the relations of production in a world system--of the functional division of labour between central capitalism and peripheral capitalism. This functional division of labour was established in the historical era of underdevelopment when the ruling family was politically dependent upon Britain for its power, and economically dependent upon a class of financial and commercial interests initially related to pearling (the production of exchange value for external markets) and commerce (the transfer of British-transported commodities to local and hinterland markets). The relations of production in Kuwait were determined by these relationships, and adjusted over time within the general framework of these relationships.

The new integration of Kuwait into the world division of labour as an oil producer rendered the ruling family economically independent of financial and commercial interests in Kuwait and consolidated the relationship between central capitalism (in the form of monopoly capital--the oil companies) and primitive accumulation in Kuwait. In transforming the basis of power from ownership of the means of production to control over the means of allocation, the new integration also consolidated the articulation of political and economic power behind the ruling family. In this situation, the dominant class interests remained essentially the same. That is, the basis of power remained externally mediated through Britain (and now the oil companies), the basis of production remained the creation of exchange value for expropriation, and the basis of accumulation remained the transfer of commodities from the industrial nations to the local markets.

The achievement of state sovereignty and sovereignty over the oil industry did not alter the structure of these relations. Rather, both occurred within the framework of this structure. The essential structure of dependency--specialized primary production in the peripery, accumulation by a peripheral capitalist class for expropriation to the center--remains fundamentally unaltered. It does, however, reveal the nature of peripheral capitalism in Kuwait. The class is peripheral in the sense of its relationship to the level of development of productive forces in Kuwait. It is integrated into the level of development of productive forces in the world centers of capitalism. Both the achievement of independence and the achievement of sovereignty over resources occurred in congruence with the level of integration of this class, and both in fact have strengthened Kuwait's integration into the world division of labour as an oil producer.

As a class, in fact, peripheral capitalists in Kuwait are dependent upon the maintenance of the structure of dependency and fundamentally antagonistic to any development of productive forces in Kuwait that alters this structure. This is examined in Chapter VI in terms of the transformation of productive forces in Kuwait resulting from Kuwait's new integration into the world division of labour as an oil producer.

CHAPTER VI

THE TRANSFORMATION OF KUWAIT

The emergence of Kuwait as a major oil supplier to the industrial nations radically transformed the economic infrastructure of Kuwait. The traditional sea-faring industries, already depressed in the inter-war period, were essentially obliterated by the early fifties by the dynamic expansion of the oil sector. In 1948, for example, only 82 ships went pearling;[1] and by 1955 only eleven.[2] Similarly, the last Kuwaiti deep-sea dhow was purchased by the Office of Education in 1954 for preservation as an historical memorial.[3] Dhow construction, maritime commerce and pearling, then, already marginalized in the inter-war period by the forces of production of the industrial world, were essentially extinguished as productive sectors by the new integration.

The Economic Transformation

In the post-oil era, the character of Kuwait's economic infrastructure was transformed from production of surplus value to consumption of surplus products. Government expenditure on development was the principal mechanism facilitating this transformation. At its core was the transfer of public revenue to the private sector. Within the structure of peripheral capitalism, development took the form of the expansion of the consumer market for the commodities of the industrial world. In the fifties and early sixties, both the physical infrastructure of the affluent society and the bureaucratic infrastructure of the welfare state were created from the huge oil revenues flowing into the nation. Both facilitated private accumulation from public revenue and expropriation to the world centers of capitalism.

---

[1] Mahmoud, p.43.

[2] al-Shamlan, History of Pearling, p.61.

[3] al-Khususi, p.239 n.

The physical transformation of Kuwait City from a sun-baked adobe town four miles long on its desert side to a modern metropolis of the most contemporary design and ostentatious architecture 25 miles long on its desert side by 1963,[4] was one of the initial mechanisms of private accumulation-expropriation of public funds. As early as 1950, foreign consultants were brought in to draw up a Master Development Plan for Kuwait City and its suburbs, identifying the sites for public institutions, industrial areas, ports and residential areas.[5] In 1952, a Development Board was established to co-ordinate construction activity, especially the development of a public utilities infrastructure. The Board devised a program of development projects for the period 1952/53-1956/57 at the cost of K.D. 91.5 million. Expenditure on development projects between 1956 and 1965/66 amounted to K.D. 345 million.[6]

---

[4] Kuwait Today, pp.136-138.

The relationship between public expenditure and private accumulation-expropriation was evident in the land acquisition and construction program. Within the city, the government bought up huge tracts of land for public projects and resold the improved surplus at about four per cent of its cost to the treasury, setting off lucrative land speculation. In addition, the government-owned banking institutions made substantial advances to merchants investing in land. Outside the city, in the once public domain of the desert, those who had insight into expansion plans fenced in and claimed ownership of huge tracts of the barren sand.

---

[5] The original plan was superceded in 1954 by a new plan for the development and expansion of Kuwait City. See The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development, The Economic Development of Kuwait (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp.28-30.

[6] The Planning Board, The First Five Year Development Plan, 1967/68-1971/72 (Kuwait: al-Rissala Press, 1968), pp.21-22.

The government then purchased these lands at handsome prices to accommodate expansion. According to the report of the mission of the International Bank for Reconstruction and Development (IBRD) sent to Kuwait in 1961 and 1963:[7]

> The Government buys land at highly inflated prices for development projects and for resale to private buyers. Land purchases amounted to between KD 40 million and KD 60 million in most recent years. Whatever the political or developmental justifications for this practice, the prices fixed by the Government for these transactions and the small amount thus far collected on the resale of the land make the public land transactions a rather indiscriminate and inequitable way of distributing the oil revenues. In addition, probably the largest share of these funds are invested abroad, so that the land purchase program fails to accomplish its main objective of invigorating the Kuwait economy.

Fakhry Shehab further observed:[8]

> Enormous private fortunes were amassed by both selling to, and buying from, the state. It has been estimated that between 1957 and 1962 close to $840,000,000 of public money was spent on land.
>
> This huge expenditure would have been justified on the grounds that it engendered economic activity and diffused a large portion of the new wealth, were it not that in fact only a limited amount was piped into the local economy. By far the larger part was remitted abroad either directly, or indirectly through the banking system.

---

[7] The Economic Development of Kuwait, p.4.

[8] Fakhry Shehab, "Kuwait: A Super-Affluent Society," Foreign Affairs, Vol. 42, No. 3 (April 1964), pp.469-570.

In spite of IBRD recommendations that "the purchasing of land at high prices in excess of development needs"[9] as a mechanism for disbursing public funds to the private sector be replaced by more economically productive mechanisms, this continued to be an important component of development expenditure, as reflected in Table 10, below:

Table 10:

State Expenditure on Property Acquisition
and Revenue from Sales of State Owned Property,
1964/65-1971/72
(in K.D. millions)

	Expenditure on Property Acquisition	Per Cent of Development Expenditures	Property Sales Revenue
1964/65	K.D.45.0	50.0%	K.D. 2.5
1965/66	29.2	38.2%	1.5
1966/67	10.0	12.3	2.0
1967/68	30.0	33.7	1.5
1968/69	17.0	29.5	1.5
1969/70	10.0	14.8	1.8
1970/71	25.0	33.0	1.7
1971/72	29.7	33.0	1.6
	K.D.166.2	31.2%	K.D. 14.1

Source: Data for 1964/65-1967/68 from Statistical Abstract, 1968, pp.113-115; data from 1968/69-1971/72 from Statistical Abstract, 1972, pp.182-185.

---

[9] The Economic Development of Kuwait, p.89.

Another example that demonstrates the government's essentially paternal relationship to private accumulation occurred in 1977. Following a considerable expansion of stock market speculation throughout 1975 and 1976, there appeared a slump in the market in 1977, indicated both by a 30.6 per cent decrease in the volume of traded shares compared to 1976 and an overall average decline of 38 per cent in the price of shares. In an effort to offset the considerable losses experienced by speculators as a result of the slump, in December 1977 the Government undertook to purchase any quantity of shares that might be offered for sale at prices it prescribed.[10] By February 1978, it was reported that the gesture cost the State K.D. 125 million.[11]

The government's efforts to modernize the City of Kuwait resulted in a construction boom, particularly in the period 1952 to 1965. Foreign planning consultants, architects, engineers, construction firms and labour planned and created a city with the best material and technologies the industrial world could supply.[12] In contrast to the land acquisition program, however, government outlays in this period to create social overhead capital did generate considerable economic activity. In addition to a great many public buildings, commercial centers, apartment blocks and suburban community projects built in the period, the following were also constructed:

---

[10] Central Bank of Kuwait, Economic Report for 1977, pp.67-72.

[11] "Kuwait," Financial Times Survey (London), February 27, 1978, p.14.

1. 176 government schools and 32 private schools.
2. 8 hospitals, 2 sanatoria, 37 dispensaries and health centers, 148 school dispensaries and 9 centers for preventive medicine.
3. 1,100 meters of paved road.
4. A number of electric power stations and an expansive network for distribution and street lighting laid; between 1956 and 1965, installed capacity increased from 30,000 kwh to 370,000 kwh.
5. Water desalinization plants with a capacity of producing 15 million gallons per day; in addition, development of underground

---

[12] In 1961, for example, the IBRD mission noted that about half the inbound tonnage of the Port of Kuwait was material for the construction program. The Economic Development of Kuwait, p.110. For a comprehensive critique of the development of modern Kuwait City, see Saba George Shiber, The Kuwait Urbanization (Kuwait: Government Press, 1964).

brackish and sweet water resources producing a total of 23 million gallons per day.

6. The creation of Kuwait Airways and the development of support and maintenance facilities.
7. The expansion of port facilities.
8. The creation by the Ministry of Public Works of several industries supplying construction materials.

The development of the bureaucratic infrastructure of the welfare state was also related to the expansion of the consumer market for the commodities of the industrial world. In this case the target was to increase the consumer capacity of the population by raising its standard of living. Two mechanisms have been utilized to achieve this: through the expansion of social services, and in the form of wages to public sector employees. This program was facilitated through the transformation of Kuwait into the welfare state--the total service society with almost every human need from the cradle to the grave serviced by institutional arrangements. Health, education, welfare, housing were transformed from the private family sector to the public service sector. Between 1962/63 and 1974/75 per capita expenditure on housing, social welfare, public health and education increased from K.D. 64.519 to K.D. 100.694,[13] an average annual increase of 4.7 per cent.

Corresponding to the growth of public services was the increasingly bureaucratic organization of society. From the simple structure of a ruling family that served as the government administration in the pre-oil era, by 1975 the government was composed of sixteen ministries. As early as 1955, 55.6 per cent of the labour force was employed by the government.[14] In 1975, the civil service comprised 104,051 employees, about 43 per cent of the labour force and representing approximately one civil servant for every ten persons in the population.[15]

The civil service is actually overstaffed, however, by the policy of guaranteeing to all Kuwaiti citizens a job in the public sector. This has been a major mechanism for increasing the standard of living of the population. Commenting on the administrative effects of overstaffing, the IBRD mission to Kuwait observed:[16]

---

[13] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1976, p.182.

[14] Mahmud Bajat Sinan, al-Kuwayt: Zahrat al-Khalij al-Arabi (Kuwait: Blossom of the Arab Gulf), (Beirut: Matabi Dar al-Kashshab, n.d.), p.174.

[15] Council of Planning, Mashru' Khitat al-Tanmiyah al-Khamsiyah, 1976/77 - 1980/81 (Proposed Five Year Plan 1976/77-1980/81), (Kuwait: Secret Document: 1976), p.82.

> Even a cursory passage through administrative offices reveals great segmentation, showing little groups of two to five persons performing a few moves in an administrative process. This fragmentation seems unnecessary in what is after all a small State and administration . . . . There is a profusion of forms and ledgers, often individually well designed and always beautifully printed, which have to be filled out laboriously, in many cases with data that already are easily accessible in other forms and ledgers. At the same time, important data are seldom available. The amount of work done by each person or section is often small because there sometimes simply is not enough work to fill the day . . . . There are, of course many exceptions to this general image, but a classified civil service of about 36,000 members serving a population of about 350,000 speaks for itself.

The increasing standard of living of the Kuwaiti population as a result of liberal government welfare and employment policies is reflected in the increasing level of consumer demand for goods and services. In 1975, average per capita income in Kuwait was $11,365, one of the highest in the world. The corresponding growth in the level of consumption is indicated by the shift in living space. While in 1957, there were 2.1 persons per room in Kuwaiti dwellings, by 1965 this had decreased to 1.9; and by 1970 to 1.5. Correspondingly, the rooms per dwelling reflected a steady increase from 3.3 in 1957, 3.5 in 1965, to 4.2 in 1970.[17] The increasing standard of consumption is also indicated by private car ownership. In 1965, there were 0.18 cars for every person in Kuwait 15 years or over, or 0.70 cars per household; by 1970, this had increased to 0.25 cars for every person 15 years or older, or 0.92 cars per household; and by 1975, to 0.35 cars for every person 15 years or older, or 1.3 cars per household.[18] In fact, on every indicator of standard of living, the population of Kuwait improves yearly its consumption capacity for luxury commodities.

---

[16] _The Economic Development of Kuwait_, p.45.

The government's development policies have generated the economic infra-structure of Kuwait, which is reflected in Table 11, below.

What Table 11 reflects in terms of the economic infra-structure of Kuwait is not only the increasing dependence of the economy upon oil over the period, but also the externalities and spread effects resulting from the transfer of surplus to the private sector. The calculation of gross domestic product is based on the value of all goods and services produced in Kuwait for final use. Nevertheless the calculation of GDP at market prices introduces some error. Had the impact of inflation been

---

[17] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1975, pp.335-336.

[18] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1976, pp. 44, 72, 277.

Table 11:

Gross Domestic Product by Industrial Origin, 1967/68-1975/76

(in K.D. millions)

	1967/68		1971/72		1975/76	
	K.D.	Percent	K.D.	Percent	K.D.	Percent
Agriculture, Forestry, Hunting and Fishing	5.0	0.6	4.0	0.3	8.4	0.2
Mining and Quarrying	474.0	54.6	902.6	67.0	2,294.2	70.0
Manufacturing	34.0	3.9	42.0	3.1	163.7	5.0
Electricity, Gas and Water	28.0	3.2	47.0	3.5	77.1	2.4
Construction	43.0	5.0	40.0	3.0	30.1	0.9
Wholesale and Retail Trade	80.0	9.2	90.0	6.7	189.6	5.8
Transport, Storage and Communications	30.0	3.5	41.0	3.0	84.7	2.6
Finance, Insurance and Real Estate	60.0	6.9	21.0	1.6	151.1	4.6
Other Services (Government)	114.0	13.1	159.0	11.8	280.3	8.5
Gross Domestic Product*	872.0	100.0	1,346.6	100.0	3,279.2	100.0

* At market prices

Source: Data for 1967/68 from Statistical Abstract, 1972, p.317; remainder from Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.209.

taken into account, the real growth between 1971/72 and 1975/76 would have been considerably less than the figures indicate. For example, price indices rose from 108.4 in 1973 to 141.0 in 1976 (1972 = base year).[19] The change in percentage distribution of GDP by industrial origin between 1967/68 and 1975/76 demonstrates the increased role of tertiary sector activities and the decreasing role of productive activities (except oil) as components, in the economy.

Government transfers to the private sector occur through three main mechanisms--current expenditures, which provide the basis of purchasing power of the population and sustain the increasing level of imports, land purchases (discussed earlier) and capital expenditure which together provide the basis for the direct transformation of public revenue to private capital. Table 12, below, provides a summary of these for the period 1972/73 to 1975/76.

Table 12 shows that in 1973/74 current expenditure did not register any significant growth, as compared with 1972/73. However, in the next two years it increased at an annual average of 40 per cent. Wages and salaries represented the largest single item of current expenditure, despite the fact that its ratio in the total declined from 68 per cent in 1972/73 to 57 per cent in 1975/76 because of larger increases in other expenditure items. The 30.6 per cent increase in salaries and wages in 1974/75 resulted from a cost of living allowance given to government employees totalling K.D. 60 million.[20]

---

[19] Central Bank of Kuwait, Economic Report for 1977, (Kuwait: Central Bank, 1977), p.77.

Table 12:

Summary of Domestic Expenditure
1972/73-1975/76
(in K.D. millions)

	1972/73	1973/74	1974/75	1975/76
Current Expenditure				
Wages and Salaries	188.9	197.5	263.6	282.1
General Expenditure	47.0	66.4	121.6	177.7
Other Expenditures and Domestic Transfers	41.1	17.0	46.6	32.2
Total	277.0	280.9	431.8	492.0
Land Acquisition	15.7	19.4	47.7	110.0
Development Expenditure	61.6	70.2	112.9	139.7
Domestic Lending	5.4	13.7	14.5	- *
Participation in Domestic Companies	4.7	45.8	5.7	75.7
Total	87.4	149.1	180.8	326.4
TOTAL	364.4	330.0	612.6	818.4

*For an exceptional 15 month fiscal year from April 1, 1975 to end of June 1976, domestic lending was K.D. 35.7 million.

Source: Central Bank of Kuwait, *Economic Report for 1975*, p.43.

---

[20] *Economic Report for 1975*, p.46.

General expenditures, which represent outlays on goods and services, constituted the second major item in current expenditure. The relative importance of these expenditures increased from 17 per cent of the total in 1972/73 to 36 per cent in 1975/76. While a significant portion of these increases are accounted for by the rise in world prices of imported commodities, the major portion represents real expansion in expenditure on goods and services.

Domestic transfers consist of a number of items, the most important of which are the exceptional allowances for retirees, social allowances, price subsidies for some basic commodities, assistance to the General Housing Authority and some other outlays to social affairs.[21] These outlays fluctuated considerably in the period.

Capital expenditure consists of direct development expenditure, loans to, and participation in domestic institutions. Direct development expenditure represented a major portion of total domestic expenditure over the period 1972/73 to 1975/76. This item recorded an annual average increase of 34 per cent. However, a high portion of this increase was accounted for by the rise in world prices of construction materials, equipment and labour.[22] In addition to the development expenditure, the Government provides financial assistance to domestic companies and institutions. This assistance is given either in the form of loans at low rates of interest, not exceeding 2 per cent, or through direct participation when the private sector is short of funds.[23]

---

[21] *Ibid.*

Over the post-oil period, development in Kuwait has been purchased at the cost of increasing dependence upon specialization in the world division of labour as an oil producer. In this period, dependence has been transformed from a specific to a universal characteristic of Kuwait's structure by policies that tie private and public consumption levels directly to oil revenues. Even the development of productive forces that has occurred in manufacturing, energy and water production and transport and communications infrastructures has served to increase dependence rather than decrease it by increasing dependence upon externally produced technologies, raising consumer absorption capacities for imported luxury commodities, and reducing the capacity of labour to develop autonomously interdependent rather than dependent productive forces. This is examined in the next section in terms of the transformation of labour.

---

[22] Ibid.

[23] Ibid., p.50.

The Transformation of Labour

The development of Kuwait as a consumer society and welfare state is directly related to the capital surplus economy and the dominance of a peripheral capitalist class integrating itself into the dominant centers of world capitalism through expropriation. The distribution of labour in Kuwait over the post-oil period among divisions of economic activity, as indicated in Table 13, below, reflects this.

Table 13:

Percentage Distribution of Active Labour Force
by Division of Economic Activity
in Census Years

	1957	1965	1970	1975
Agriculture, Hunting and Fishing	1.2%	1.2%	1.7%	2.5%
Mining and Quarrying	6.3	3.9	3.1	1.6
Manufacturing Industries	7.7	10.0	13.7	8.2
Construction	10.0	16.1	14.4	10.8
Electricity, Gas and Water	-	3.9	3.1	2.4
Wholesale and Retail Trade	9.6	12.8	14.1	13.3
Transportation and Communication	4.1	5.6	5.2	5.3
Services	51.3	46.0	44.4	55.9
Activities not adequately defined	9.8	0.5	0.3	-
Total	100.0%	100.0%	100.0%	100.0%

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.86.

Table 13 reflects the changing distribution of labour in Kuwait between 1957 and 1975 according to division of economic activity. It demonstrates that throughout the period, the major portion of the labour force has been concentrated in the service sector (which includes both government and private sector services). Mining and quarrying, which makes the greatest contribution to NDP, has been a minor component as a proportion of labour force participation throughout the period. The steady growth in the proportion of the labour force occupied in wholesale and retail trade, on the other hand, reflects the expansion of this sector with the progress of consumerism in Kuwait.

The table does not reflect the fact that Kuwait's labour force over the period expanded from 80,288 in 1957 to 304,582 in 1975;[24] a 279 per cent increase in the size of the labour force in an eighteen year period. What is striking about Table 12 in the light of this fact is the relative stability in the proportions of labour distributed by economic activity. What this indicates in terms of the transformation of productive forces in Kuwait in the post-oil era is the stability of the relation between peripheral capital and labour in a period of unprecedented expansion both in the volume of capital and the size of the labour force.

---

[24] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.81. Enumeration in 1957 for labour force 12 years and over; in 1975, for labour force 15 years and over.

The relation between peripheral capital and labour in Kuwait is specified by the concept of underdevelopment of productive forces. In Marxist theory, development of productive forces refers to the relationship between living labour as the subject of development and natural and man-made resources as the objects of development. The common indices of development standard in the literature are generally aggregated indices of consumption levels or productivity levels that treat resources as the subject and labour as the object of development. While poverty and low productivity have been the characteristic correlates of underdevelopment, nevertheless, level of development of productive forces is an analytically distinct concept from these measures. Its indicators are more appropriately specified by the distribution of labour in terms of the production of value. An increasing level of development of productive forces, then, is indicated not only by increasing productivity levels in value production (quantity of labour), but also by the diversification of labour in terms of value production (quality of labour). In the capitalist system where production is concentrated in the creation of exchange value (commodity production), and labour itself is a commodity, shifts in the distribution of labour across productive sectors, mediated through the labour market, may be utilized as an indicator of the level of development of productive forces.

In these terms, narrow specialization of productivity and unequal development of productive forces are indicators of underdevelopment. Although the level of productivity may be high in the productive sector, specialization in a world division of labour specifically limits increasing productivity across economic sectors and diversification of productive labour. This limitation on the level of development of productive forces is a function of the relations of production in a world system--of the functional division of labour between central capitalism and peripheral capitalism.

The relation between peripheral capital and labour in Kuwait is specified by the process of marginalization--that is, by the increasing unproductivity of labour in terms of value production in an economy specified by intense specialization of productive forces and consumption of capital surplus. This is indicated in Table 14, below, which shows the percentage distribution of the labour force by occupational division and economic sector in 1975.

As Table 14 demonstrates, production and related workers and labourers are the largest category in the occupational division. The largest single concentration of this category, however,are occupied in social services,

Table 14:

Percentage Distribution of Labour Force by Occupational Divisions and Economic Sectors, 1975

ECONOMIC SECTIONS Occupational Divisions	Social Services	Financial Services	Transportation and Communi-cations	Wholesale and Retail Trade	Electricity, Gas and Water	Construction	Manufacturing Industries	Mining and Quarrying	Agriculture, Hunting and Fishing	TOTAL
Professional, Technical and Related Workers	10.9%	0.5%	0.4%	0.5%	0.6%	0.3%	0.5%	0.3%	0.1%	14.1%
Administrative and Managerial Workers	0.3	0.2	0.1	0.2	0.1	0.0	0.1	0.0	0.0	1.0
Clerical and Related Workers	7.3	1.0	1.4	1.4	0.4	0.2	0.6	0.3	0.0	12.6
Sales Workers	0.0	0.2	0.0	7.7	0.0	0.0	0.1	0.0	0.0	8.0
Service Workers	23.1	0.2	0.3	1.7	0.3	0.1	0.3	0.1	0.1	26.2
Agricultural, Animal Husbandry Fishermen and Hunters	0.4	0.0	0.0	0.0	0.0	0.0	0.1	0.0	2.2	2.6
Production and Related Workers and Labourers	11.7	0.1	3.0	1.8	9.4	1.8	6.5	0.9	0.2	35.4
TOTAL	53.7%	2.2%	5.2%	13.3%	10.8%	2.4%	8.2%	1.6%	2.5%	99.9%

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.94.

the economic sector that in fact occupies over 53 per cent of the labour force. Clerical and related workers, sales workers and service workers together account for about 47 per cent of the occupational distribution and are primarily concentrated in social services and wholesale and retail trade. Professional, technical and related workers, the third largest single category, are predominantly concentrated in social services. What the above table demonstrates is the dominance of employment related to consumption and services (the transformation of social relations into commodities). Social services are the major commodity occupying the Kuwaiti labour force. Productive labour--that is, labour that works upon material and man-made resources to produce or reproduce the objects of life--constitutes no more than 26 per cent of the labour force in Kuwait.[25]

The limited development of primary sector occupations is accounted for historically by Kuwait's lack of an agricultural basis and the nomadic nature of its hinterland population. Oil and gas exploitation, the major primary sector industry, is highly capital intensive, with total employment in 1975 of 4,476.[26] Fishing, a traditional activity in pre-oil Kuwait, and one with potential for development of productive forces,[27] was one of the early industries to develop in the post-oil period.[28] The limitation on development of productive forces imposed by specialization in the world division of labour and integration into the world market is highlighted in this sector, however. While in 1966 the contribution of fishing to gross domestic production prices was K.D. 3.3 million, by 1971 this had decreased to K.D. 0.3 million.[29] In 1974, the contribution had increased to K.D. 0.7 million (an increase that is at least partially accounted for by the substantial rise in the price index over the period), and the number of persons engaged in fishing was 2,181.[30] In that year Kuwait exported fish and fish preparations (primarily shrimp to the U.S.) of K.D. 1.6 million and imported K.D. 0.8 million from this commodity group.[31] Specialization and integration, then, have actually produced the decline of fishing, and the potential for development of productive forces in terms of stimulating the growth of associated industries has not been utilized.

---

[25] Here productive labour includes professional, technical, and related workers; production and related workers and labourers; and agricultural, animal husbandry, fishermen and hunters. Only these occupational groups that are occupied in the following economic sectors have been included: transportation and communications; electricity, gas and water; construction; manufacturing industries, agriculture, hunting and fishing.

---

[26] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1976, p.52.

[27] See, for example, The Economic Development of Kuwait, pp.129-130.

[28] El Mallakh, pp.30-21, 119.

[29] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.176-177.

[30] Ibid.

The limitation on the level of development of productive forces is more evident in the oil sector, where Kuwait's resources and potentials are apparent. Noting the availability of cheap capital in Kuwait and the abundance of hydrocarbon raw materials, the IBRD mission to Kuwait in 1963 reported on the favourable prospects for the development of capital intensive oil refining and petro-chemical industries.[32] Some development in this direction has taken place. Between 1967 and 1974, for example, production of fertilizers and chemical products--urea, ammonium sulphate, ammonium hydroxide, sulphuric acid--increased from 228,876 metric tons to 1,248,876 metric tons, a 446 per cent increase.[33] Between 1968 and 1974, oil refinery products increased from 99.4 million barrels to 121.2 million barrels, a 22 per cent increase over the period.[34] Industrial activities other than crude petroleum and natural gas production contributed K.D. 171 million to gross domestic production prices in 1974, representing a 119 per cent increase over 1966. The manufacture of industrial chemicals, other chemical products and petroleum refineries constituted 74 per cent of this contribution.[35] Nevertheless, manufacturing industries contributed only five per cent to GDP in 1975/76 and constituted only 8.2 per cent of the labour force in 1975.

---

[31] Ibid., p.286.

[32] The Economic Development of Kuwait, pp.114-119. Also see El Mallakh, pp.112-116.

[33] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1975, p.130.

[34] Ibid., p.112.

What this indicates is that while refining and petro-chemicals industries have experienced development over the period, these remain specific, limited aspects of economic activity in Kuwait. They have not produced the externalities and spread effects in terms of the economic infrastructure that the availability of capital and resources makes feasible. In terms of capitalist development, such development would only be feasible in terms of international markets. And this would place Kuwait capital in direct competition with the petro-chemical and refining industries of the world centers of capitalism, particularly the United States which has the most advanced petro-chemicals industry. In terms of the interests of peripheral capitalism, however, such development is noneconomic. Investment capital flows out of Kuwait, and labour in Kuwait is occupied in either the public sector which services private accumulation from public revenue or in the private sector which transfers revenue and wages to the private sector.

---

[35] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.176-177.

The greatest concentration of employment in the private sector is in wholesale and retail trade--a total of 34,990 employees accounting for 33.4 per cent of employment in the private sector in 1973.[36] There were 10,925 wholesale and retail establishments in Kuwait in 1973 with less than five employees, accounting for 56 per cent of the employment in this area.[37] In Kuwait, in other words, there is a preponderance of petty shopkeepers. Private sector manufacturing was the second largest category in terms of employment, accounting for 22,090 or 21.1 per cent of the private sector labour force in 1973. About 37 per cent of the employment was concentrated in establishments of less than ten employees, 30 per cent in establishments of from ten to one hundred employees, and the remainder in establishments of one hundred or more employees.[38] The distribution of employment among manufacturing industries indicates that the majority of them are small craft-like or specialty operations that cater to luxury or specialized markets (furniture and fixtures, metal products, printing and printing products), or intermediate assembly and maintenance operations that assemble or service imported items (transport assembly and repair; assembly and repair of electrical equipment). Private sector services were the third largest category in terms of employment, accounting for 16,486 or 15.7 per cent of private sector labour force. Establishments of less than five employees accounted for the highest concentration of employment--22 per cent.[39]

---

[36] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.101.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Ibid.

The distribution of labour in Kuwait reflects the transformation of the economic infrastructure from production of surplus value to consumption of surplus products. Productive labour has been subordinated to and marginalized by the importation of capital intensive technologies, and marginal labour has been absorbed by the transformation of social relations into commodities. The high standard of living made possible by the capital surplus economy masks the contradictions inherent in an economy where consumption, not production, is the basis of socio-economic activity. Nevertheless, the contradictions in Kuwait are apparent in the demographic transformation that has occurred in the post-oil era.

---

[39] Ibid.

The Demographic Transformation

In 1949, Kuwait's population was estimated to be approximately 100,000. Table 15, below, reflects the dramatic demographic transformation of Kuwait in the post-oil era.

Table 15:

Population of Kuwait
in Census Years

	Kuwaiti		Non-Kuwaiti		Total	
	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent
1957	113,622	55.0	92,851	45.0	206,473	100.0
1961	161,909	50.4	159,721	49.6	321,621	100.0
1965	220,059	47.1	247,280	52.9	467,339	100.0
1970	347,396	47.0	391,266	53.0	738,662	100.0
1975	472,088	47.5	522,749	52.5	994,837	100.0

Source: *Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977*, p.21.

Table 15 demonstrates that Kuwait's population increased 381 per cent between 1957 and 1975, an annual average increase of 21 per cent over the eighteen year period. Foreign immigration constituted the largest component of increase, and by 1965 Kuwaiti nationals constituted a minority in the nation.

The large-scale immigration into Kuwait resulted from the demands for labour emanating from the ambitious development programs undertaken by the government. In

1957, 53.9 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti population were males in the labour force age range of 15 to 39.[40] By 1975, when 29.1 per cent of the immigrant population had been in Kuwait ten or more years,[41] the considerable skewing of the non-Kuwaiti population pyramid caused by the predominance of labour force age males had been reduced to 28.1 per cent, although males still constituted a larger proportion--58.8 per cent.[42] Over the period, the pattern of migration had shifted from males in the labour force age range to family units with the male head in the labour force age range. Reflecting this, by 1975 16.6 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti population was in the dependent age range of 0 to 5, compared with 7.0 per cent in 1957.[43]

In contrast to the non-Kuwaiti population pyramid, the Kuwaiti population pyramid in the five censuses from 1957 to 1975 reflected the typical population pyramid, with the male/female ratio approximately equal and the age distribution wide at the base years--reflecting the high birth rate of about 53 per thousand over the period and the greatly lowered death rate due to improved sanitation and medical care--and gradually tapering off to a peak at the upper limits of life expectancy. Correspondingly, males in the labour force age range of 15 to 39 made up 18.1 per cent of the Kuwaiti population in 1957 and 17.8 per cent in 1975.[44]

---

[40] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.40-41.

[41] Ibid., p.63

[42] Ibid., p.41.

[43] Ibid., pp.40-41.

What is significant about the demographic transformation of Kuwait in the present context is the fact that the distinction between Kuwaiti nationals and non-Kuwaiti nationals is the fundamental classification of the population in every category of each of the five censuses. According to the nationality law of 1959, Kuwaiti nationality is recognized for those and their descendants who resided in Kuwait before 1920 and maintained residence there to 1959.[45] All others are classified as non-Kuwaitis. By 1975, 16.4 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti population had been in Kuwait 10 to 14 years, and another 12.7 per cent had been in Kuwait 15 or more years.[46] In spite of this period of tenure, they remain classified as non-Kuwaitis and have little option to change this status because of the restrictive naturalization law.

---

[44] Ibid.

[45] Amiri Decree No. 15, December 5, 1959.

[46] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.63.

The naturalization law as amended in 1960 provides that naturalization for non-Kuwaitis of Arab origin requires a ten-year residency before application for citizenship decree; for immigrants from other than Arab origins, the residency requirement is fifteen years. Time spent in Kuwait prior to 1960 does not count toward the residency requirement.[47] Even after application, the decree is by no means routine. In fact, it takes considerable political influence to attain a decree. Nevertheless, between 1965 and 1975, 71,379 naturalizations occurred.[48] However, naturalized citizens are second class citizens; they may not participate in elections, be elected to the National Assembly (currently suspended) or hold cabinet positions at the sub-cabinet level or above in the executive branch. Also, they are subject to deportation and their citizenship status subject to revocation under certain conditions of law violation. Furthermore, the law does not allow for naturalization of the children when the parent is naturalized; and naturalized citizenship cannot be transmitted to offspring.[49]

---

[47] See The Economic Development of Kuwait, pp.26-27.

[48] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1975, p.68; and Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.62.

[49] Al-Ra'i al-Amm (Kuwait), February 2, 1975.

Non-Kuwaiti is a status distinction that permeates the entire social structure of Kuwaiti society and places manifold disabilities upon the population so classified. Non-Kuwaitis have no legal rights in Kuwait. A non-Kuwaiti cannot secure a working permit or residency without the guarantee of a Kuwaiti national who is responsible for the non-Kuwaiti in all legal and financial dealings (called the System of Guarantees). A non-Kuwaiti must leave the country once unemployed. Furthermore, non-Kuwaitis do not have access to the welfare system that Kuwaitis have. While free medical care is provided to all residents of Kuwait, only Kuwaitis are eligible for the low interest housing loans and welfare assistance. Public education is available to non-Kuwaitis only in certain occupational categories--doctors, engineers, pharmacists and teachers. In the labour market, non-Kuwaitis may not unionize. Within the civil service, which was made up of 59.8 per cent non-Kuwaitis in 1976,[50] only Kuwaitis obtain permanent appointments and are entitled to a pension. Non-Kuwaitis work on a contract basis and are only entitled to a gratuity calculated on a lower actuarial basis. Contracts are subject to termination with two months notice. Furthermore, Kuwaitis are preferentially recruited, require lower qualifications for the same grade as a non-Kuwaiti, and are preferentially promoted over non-Kuwaitis irrespective of qualifications.[51]

---

[50] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.112.

Politics of the Demographic Transformation

The heavy influx of immigrant labour in the early 'fifties resulted from the heavy labour demands of the booming construction industry, the new opportunities of an expanding consumer market, and the rapid growth of the government bureaucracy. Until 1954, immigration was unrestricted and unsupervised. However, in that year, an uproar by unskilled Kuwaiti labour over high unemployment in their ranks due to competition with foreign labour drew the government's attention to the issue of immigration.[52] As a result, the Office of Social Affairs conducted a survey of the labour force in April 1955 and discovered that only 13 per cent of the labour force was made up of Kuwaiti nationals.[53] This brought to the forefront the question of not only the economic but also the political role of a large immigrant population and the nature of the social structure that would result from heavy dependence upon immigrant labour--particularly in the elite decision-making occupations.

---

[51] See The Economic Development of Kuwait, pp.41-42.

[52] Razzak, pp.178-179.

[53] Mahmud Bahjat Sinan, al-Kuwayt: Zahrat al-Khalij al-Arabi (Kuwait: Blossom of the Gulf), (Beirut: Matabi Dar al-Kashshaf), p.171.

The problem that large-scale immigration and structural change posed for the ruling class was one of boundary maintenance: namely, having made the commitment to modernization, the problem of maintaining class legitimation based essentially upon tribal ideology within a modernizing institutional infrastructure is compouded by the pervasive influence of cultural diversity, an influence that is most prominent--indeed, essentially unchallenged in the 'fifties--in the elite occupations that were in fact creating and administering the institutional transformation to the consumer society. This is indicated in Table 16, below.

Table 16:

Professional and Technical Labour Force
by Nationality,
1957, 1965, 1970 and 1975

	Professional and Technical Workers					
	Kuwaiti		Non-Kuwaiti		Total	
	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent
1957	484	12.8	3,299	87.2	3,783	100.0%
1965	1,528	11.2	12,093	88.8	13,621	100.0%
1970	3,734	14.6	21,888	85.4	25,622	100.0%
1975	9,739	23.3	32,097	76.7	41,836	100.0%

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.95.

The progressive expansion of the Kuwaiti component of professional and technical workers[54] between 1957 and 1975 resulted from social engineering policies inherent in the planning process, initiated about 1960, that specifically aimed at the containment and gradual replacement of non-Kuwaiti occupational elite with Kuwaitis. The role of social engineering in Kuwait will be discussed in the next chapter. The point to be made here is that these policies were specifically aimed at decision-makers in the public sector and were reinforced by employment and naturalization policies, discussed earlier, that aimed at the isolation of non-Kuwaitis from participation in the social structure. The attitude adopted toward the immigrant population was that their role in Kuwait was based purely upon a transient economic exchange of labour for wages, and as such had no past nor future in the society. As one government publication explained, "Kuwait is not open for immigration, although she welcomes all who wish to stay and work or operate a business, provided their stay is temporary."[55]

---

[54] Professional, technical and related workers constitute the following occupational categories in the census: physical scientists and related technicians; architects, engineers, and related technicians; surveyors, draughtsmen and technical assistants; aircraft and ships officers; life scientists and related technicians; medical doctors, dentists and veterinarians; other medical occupations; statisticians, mathematicians, system analysts and related technicians; economists; accountants; jurists; teachers; members of religious orders; authors, journalists and related workers; sculptors, painters, photographers and related creative artists; composers and performing artists; athletes, sportsmen and related workers; professional, technical and related workers N.E.C. Central Statistical Office, Classification of Occupations, 1975 (Kuwait: Planning Board, 1975).

The reason for the heavy reliance upon immigrant labour in professional, technical and other skilled occupational categories was related to the irrelevance of the post-oil economic infrastructure to the indigenous labour of the society. The post-oil infrastructure depended upon the importation of foreign technologies and required a division of labour based upon knowledge of techniques and skills alien to the Kuwaiti population. Educational level is the standard measure of knowledge of modern techniques and acquisition of modern skills--that is, techniques and skills related to the market economy and capital intensive technologies. In 1957, 62.6 per cent of the Kuwaiti population was illiterate; 27.9 per cent had knowledge of reading and writing but had not completed primary school; 1.5 per cent had completed primary school; and only 0.4 per cent had completed a level of education above the primary level (intermediate, secondary and university).

---

[55] Anon., A View of Kuwait (Washington, D.C.: Embassy of the State of Kuwait, n.d.), p.31.

In contrast, 6.8 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti population had a secondary certificate or more.[56]

By 1975 the intensive efforts to raise the educational distribution of the Kuwaiti population, to be discussed in the next chapter, had reduced illiteracy to 44.6 per cent; correspondingly, 6.8 per cent had completed secondary school or more. However, the continuing demands of an increasingly tertiary-oriented economy had proportionately increased the demand for highly skilled labour, a demand that was filled by importation. Consequently, by 1975, 18.3 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti population had completed secondary school or more.[57]

As noted earlier, it is the government's policy to employ all Kuwaitis not absorbed in the private sector. Hence, Kuwaitis are highly concentrated in the public sector. In 1975, 72 per cent of the Kuwaiti labour force was in the public sector.[58] The transfer of oil revenue in the form of wages to a population whose skills are non-marketable in the labour force has been a principal mechanism for the expansion of consumerism. The policy, in effect, disguises unemployment and confounds bureaucratic inefficiency. It has, however, also served to reinforce status distinctions between Kuwaitis and non-Kuwaitis by guaranteeing to Kuwaitis a form of economic security not available to the non-Kuwaitis, fostering a sense of privilege among the Kuwait population and a sense of insecurity in the non-Kuwaiti population, and supporting higher consumption levels of the Kuwaiti population.

---

[56] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.36.

[57] Ibid.

[58] Proposed Five Year Plan, 1976/77-1980/81, p.72.

In spite of the high concentration of Kuwaitis in the public sector, however, they made up only 40.2 per cent of the civil service labour force in 1976.[59] The reason for the civil service's dependence upon immigrants is indicated in the following table:

Table 17:

Government Civil Servants
by Educational Attainment, February 1976

Educational Attainment	Percentage Distribution Kuwaitis	 Non-Kuwaitis
Illiterate	24.1%	26.9%
Read and Write	31.3	28.4
Primary	8.1	3.9
Intermediate	13.3	4.7
Secondary	13.0	15.0
Below University Level	3.8	2.4
1st University Degree	6.1	17.4
Post Graduates	0.3	1.3
	100.0%	100.0%

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.95.

---

[59] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.112.

Kuwaitis do not have the kinds of skills related to the functioning of the modern welfare state bureaucracy or the capital export economy. The above table reflects that while only 6.4 per cent of indigenous Kuwaiti civil servants have a university degree or more, 18.7 per cent of the immigrant civil servants have achieved this educational level. Considering the educational attainment distribution, higher bureaucratic posts are disproportionately distributed among indigenous Kuwaitis, as indicated in Table 18, below:

Table 18:

Government Civil Servants by Range, February 1976

	Kuwait	Non-Kuwaiti
Range I	0.3%	0.3%
Range II	10.9	4.9
Range III	45.5	31.3
Range IV	33.1	18.0
Contracts	0.0	2.3
Fixed Salaries	0.1	10.5
Permanent Labourers	9.8	30.9
Casual Labourers	0.0	1.5
	100.0%	100.0%

Note: Range denotes the broadest level of classification of civil service posts in the hierarchical authority structure of Kuwait's civil service bureaucracy, Range I being the highest posts.

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.116-117.

Table 18 reflects the practice of preferentially placing Kuwaitis in positions within the civil service hierarchy, and the attempt, particularly at the higher levels of decision-making, to maintain a balance between Kuwaiti and non-Kuwaiti incumbents to office. Even though incumbency assignment is ascriptively biased, however, there remains heavy dependence upon immigrants even at the highest levels. Furthermore, unskilled or semi-skilled non-Kuwaitis (those with minimal or no educational qualifications) are concentrated in the labour categories, while only 9.8 per cent of Kuwaitis are in these categories even though 24.1 per cent are illiterate.

Dialectics of the Demographic Transformation

While highly skilled non-Kuwaitis are lured to Kuwait by high salaries and a high standard of living, a system of job insecurity and political disenfranchisement functions to control their political involvement. By 1965, non-Kuwaitis constituted 52.9 per cent of the population, 76.7 per cent of the labour force, and 88.8 per cent of the professional and technical elite. Kuwaitis, in essence, represented not only a numerical minority in the nation, but also a leisured minority dependent upon government subsidy for a high standard of living, and dependent upon immigrants to administer their health, welfare and security. Furthermore, the dynamics of dependency in Kuwait continued to generate greater demands for imported labour, and by

1970, non-Kuwaitis represented 53 per cent of the population.

There are profound political implications of a large expatriate population disenfranchised from the political sphere but dominating the occupational, educational and cultural spheres. In practical terms, the problem posed for the ruling class is to maintain legitimation when a major portion of the population has no commitment to the political system but forms the occupational elite of the economic system. While Kuwaitis share the sentimental heritage of living under the same ruling family since 1756--a heritage that gives legitimacy to Kuwait's class structure--they also share with the major portion of the non-Kuwaiti population a common cultural and historical heritage that is the basis of Arab nationalism--the ideology of Arab unity, anti-imperialism and social transformation that challenges the class nature of underdevelopment and dependency in the Arab world.[60]

In 1975, 80.2 per cent of the 522,749 non-Kuwaitis were nationals of other Arab countries. Furthermore, 50.7 per cent came from two Arab countries: Jordan and Palestine

---

[60] See, for example, Tareq Y. Ismael, The Arab Left (Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1976). For a study of the radical nature of contemporary Arab nationalism.

(39.1 per cent), and Egypt (11.6 per cent).[61] These two nationalities, in fact, accounted for 72 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti professional, technical and related workers in 1975.[62] Nationals from Lebanon, Syria and Iraq (which together accounted for 20.7 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti population),[63] comprised another 10.7 per cent of the non-Kuwaiti professional, technical and related workers.[64]

A major portion of the non-Kuwaiti professional and technical elite, then, are expatriates of other Arab countries, the most politicized countries of the Arab world. Kuwait has encouraged the immigration of the educated malcontents of the region to facilitate its modernization program by constitutionally prohibiting the extradition of political refugees.[65] The price of a politicized educated elite, however, is a heavy burden for a highly conservative, Western oriented ruling class. Due in no small part to the pressures of this group, Kuwait has adopted the polemics of regional integration and Arab development supported by an economic assistance policy to Arab nations that consumes about ten per cent of its national income annually--more than any other foreign aid donor.

---

[61] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.61.

[62] Ibid., p.91.

[63] Ibid., p.61.

[64] Ibid., p.91.

[65] Article 46.

The Kuwait Fund for Arab Economic Development, established in 1961, is the principal agency for funneling funds to the Arab world.[66] The role of economic assistance and regional integration in the present class structure of Kuwait has served not only to further Kuwait's integration into the world capitalist structure but the region's integration as well. The projects funded generally serve to 1) increase the capacity of receiving nations to supply raw materials to Western markets by funding the importation of technologies of scale, and 2) increase the capacity of recipient regimes to stay in power against popular opposition.[67] The funds invested in regional aid, in other words, have essentially replaced the functions of Western aid, and are funneled back to the centers of capitalism, as pointed out by El Mallakh, Kadhim and Poulson:[68]

---

[66] See Robert Stephens, The Arab's New Frontier (London: Temple Smith, 1976) and Soliman Demir, The Kuwait Fund and the Political Economy of Arab Regional Development (New York: Praeger, 1976), for studies of the Kuwait Fund.

[67] The Annual Reports of the Kuwait Fund for Arab Economic Development provide the details of all projects funded.

> It must be emphasized that a greater commitment to regionalism and assistance to other developing countries, though reducing the direct flow of capital channeled into various investment outlets in the West, does not necessarily affect adversely the total flow of petrodollars--direct and indirect--into Western economies. Whether or not, and to what extent, funds provided for regional development and assistance to the developing countries are re-cycled to OECD countries in the form of higher import levels depends principally on the patterns of trade of recipient countries. However, since the OECD countries are by far the leading exporters to the majority of recipient countries, the leakage effect must indeed be small.

The contradiction inherent in the goals of Arab nationalism and peripheral capitalism are played out on a small scale in Kuwait in the relation between the immigrant population and the political structure. Dependent upon external forces of production, labour in Kuwait, and the entire Arab East, is specifically inhibited from developing beyond the bounds of the political divisions established by imperialist powers. The effective result is that the entire Middle East, including Kuwait, remains underdeveloped and dependent, in spite of the unprecedented level of capital accumulation in the area.[69] Progressive movements seeking a new integration of the region's labour are increasingly radicalized by the apparent contradictions.[70] In Kuwait, the problem for the ruling class is one of exploiting the expertise of immigrant labour to serve the functions of dependency, while isolating their political involvement and maintaining the legitimacy of class power when the tribal base of legitimacy is diminishing. Policy responses to this problem have been, on the one hand, to control the immigrant population by a system of insecurity in terms of their tenure in Kuwait; on the other hand, through paternalistic policies toward the Kuwaiti population to engender dependence on the ruling class and status distinctions between the Kuwaiti and non-Kuwaiti groups.

---

[68] R. El Mallakh, M. Kadhim and B. Poulson, Capital Investment in the Middle East: The Use of Surplus Funds for Regional Development (New York: Praeger, 1977), pp.92-93.

The contradiction is that the dynamics of dependency in Kuwait's capital surplus economy generate continued demands for the increment of the skilled labour force. Removal of status rewards to the Kuwaiti population to force greater participation in the labour force would weaken a principal mechanism of legitimation and separation from non-Kuwaitis.

---

[69] See Galal A. Amin, The Modernization of Poverty: A Study in the Political Economy of Growth in Nine Arab Countries, 1945-1970 (Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1974).

[70] See Ismael, and Fred Haliday, Arabia Without Sultans (Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1974).

However, immigration to fulfill these demands further increases the non-Kuwaiti population. A concerted population policy to hold down the rate of increase of the immigrant population and increase the rate of growth of the Kuwaiti population reduced the proportion of non-Kuwaitis by 1975 to 52.5 per cent.[71] A major mechanism of this policy was to increase the rate of settlement of bedouin tribes from the desert areas adjacent to Kuwait. Unlike the immigrant population classified as non-Kuwaitis, these tribes are automatically and immediately given first class citizenship in Kuwait and are provided major social assistance, especially housing allowances, upon citizenship acquisition. Between 1965 and 1970, there was a net increase to the Kuwaiti population from immigration of 62,278;[72] and between 1970 and 1975, 38,120.[73]

Immigration of the tribes is relevant to the stability of relations of production in Kuwait. It reinforces not only the tribal basis of legitimacy but also helps to offset population imbalances. However, these tribes are irrelevant, in the short term, to the forces of production in Kuwait since they are primarily illiterate bedouins skilled in nomadic desert production and alien to urban modes. Furthermore, their settlement requires the expansion of government services to aid them in the transformation from nomadic life and socialize them to the patterns of urban life. The expansion of these services, in turn, increases demands for skilled labour.

---

[71] The population policy was outlined in general form in The First Five Year Plan, 1967/68-1971/72, pp.128-133.

[72] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1976, p.87.

[73] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.64.

The principal contradiction of peripheral capital and labour in Kuwait relates to the marginal role played by the indigenous population and the dependence upon immigrant labour. This results from several interrelated factors: the predominantly tertiary sector orientation of the economy, the role of a financial and commercial class in facilitating the external flow of capital, the role of the government in promoting a high consumption society. The effective result is that the economy of Kuwait has developed independent of the labour of the society's population. The population functions as consumers, not producers, in an economy that is organized around externally developed and oriented forces of production. Like most everything else in Kuwait, then, an exploitable labour force had to be imported too.

The Exploitation of Immigrant Labour. The exploitation of immigrant labour is apparent in establishments operating in the private sector. These establishments accounted for 45.5 per cent of the total labour force in 1975. However, only 2.6 per cent of employment in these establishments was Kuwaiti.[74] Immigrant labour not only from the surplus labour pools of the Arab world but also from Pakistan, India, and Iran serve to keep the returns to labour in the private sector minimal. This is reflected in Table 19, below, which pinpoints the concentration of immigrant labour in the private sector and the wage differential between Kuwaiti and non-Kuwaiti labourers.

Table 19:
Operating Establishments
by Section of Economic Activity,
Number of Labourers and Average Monthly Wages
(in K.D.), 1974

	Kuwaiti		Non-Kuwaiti	
	Number	Wages	Number	Wages
Agriculture, Hunting and Fishing	-	-	1,550	29
Mining and Quarrying	721	207	674	133
Manufacturing	142	195	17,908	49
Electricity, Gas and Water	-	-	5	52
Construction	-	-	12,705	46
Wholesale and Retail Trade	22	147	22,082	48
Transport, Storage and Communications	29	95	4,049	91
Finance, Insurance and Business Services	3	106	1,286	38
Other	7	205	11,827	48
Total	924	200	72,086	50

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.107.

---

[74] *Ibid*., p.103.

As Table 19 demonstrates, Kuwaiti workers classified as labourers earned three times as much as their non-Kuwaiti counterparts. A disparity is also reflected in these establishments among workers classified as administrative and technical workers. Of the total 25,222 workers in this classification, 93 per cent were non-Kuwaitis. They earned an average monthly wage of K.D. 120; while the 1,662 Kuwaitis in this classification earned an average monthly wage of K.D. 265.[75]

The public sector also reflects a wage disparity between Kuwaiti and non-Kuwaiti civil servants. This is indicated in Table 20, below, which shows the average monthly wage of Kuwaiti and non-Kuwaiti civil servants by occupational classification.

As Table 20 reflects, Kuwaiti wages in the civil service are an average of 65 per cent more than the wages of their non-Kuwaiti counterparts. The largest disparities occurred in unskilled and skilled manual occupations. Kuwaiti workers classified in the division of production and related workers and labourers, for example, earned an average of 158 per cent more than non-Kuwaitis in this division. In the 1975 census, of the 105,608 members of the labour force classified under production and related

---

[75] *Ibid.*, pp.106-107.

Table 20:

Government Civil Servants
by Occupational Division and Average Monthly Wages
(in K.D.), February 1976

	Kuwaiti		Non-Kuwaiti	
	Number	Wages	Number	Wages
Professional, Technical and Related Workers	10,089	245	22,260	198
Administrative and Managerial Workers	460	556	33	503
Clerical and Related Workers	14,181	198	7,075	158
Sales Workers	69	254	10	220
Service Workers	11,085	162	16,672	80
Agricultural, Animal Husbandry and Fishermen	318	191	1,816	69
Production and Related Workers and Labourers	10,543	204	21,812	79
Total	46,765	204	69,678	123

Source: _Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977_, pp.124-125.

workers and labourers, 84.5 per cent was immigrant labour.[76] Of the 15,348 Kuwaitis in this classification, about 68 per cent worked in the public sector, where the average monthly wages were 86.5 per cent higher than in the private sector.[77] In contrast, of the 90,260 non-Kuwaitis in this classification, only about 24 per cent worked in the public sector.[78]

---

[76] _Ibid_., pp.92-93.

Thus, non-Kuwaitis are exploited in the Kuwait labour market, and Kuwaiti labour is buffered against exploitation. Immigrants, in effect, constitute a cheap source of labour that can be expelled from the nation when the growth rate begins to subside. At current rates of oil exploitation, it is estimated that Kuwait's oil resources will be depleted in from 80 to 100 years.[79] The building of alternative sources of income is based upon income from external investment and the creation of capital intensive industries. A large percentage of the current labour force will be superfluous, and the ability to expel surplus labour will be politically expeditious.

Conclusion

This chapter identified three aspects of Kuwait's new integration into the world capitalist division of labour: the transformation of the economic infrastructure, the transformation of labour, and the demographic transformation. The relationships among these three categories of transformation were examined in terms of the relationship between peripheral capital and labour. In this context, the contradiction between the relations of production of peripheral capitalism and the forces of production of marginalized labour were identified in terms of government policies. Chapter VII will expand this argument in terms of the politics of stratification in the welfare state.

---

[77] Ibid., pp.92, 123-128. The percentages are approximate since the labour force by occupational groups was based on the 1975 census, while the government civil servants by occupation groups was based upon a February 1976 census of government employees. This difference introduces some error in the comparison.

[78] Ibid.

[79] El Mallakh, Economic Development and Regional Cooperation, p.98.

CHAPTER VII

THE POLITICS OF STRATIFICATION: SOCIAL CHANGE AND SOCIAL CONTROL IN THE WELFARE STATE

In the previous chapter, the welfare state in Kuwait was identified as a fundamental function of the relations of production of dependency. The emergence of the welfare state was identified in terms of its role in promoting consumerism and sustaining the accumulation-expropriation structure of dependency. Embodied in the policies of the welfare state are also the social control functions of peripheral capitalism--specifically, the control of marginalized labour. This chapter examines the social control functions in terms of the politics of stratification and planning in the capital surplus society.

The Politics of Stratification in the Welfare State

In the post-oil era in Kuwait, the ruling family effectively controls a tremendous surplus that has made its life-style one of the most oppulent in the world and far out of reach of the average Kuwaiti. The shaikh's personal income from oil revenue in 1973, for example, was K.D. 8 million;[1] and with the introduction in 1961 of a distinction between the privy purse and public revenue, members of the ruling family began receiving a substantial share of oil revenue in the form of permanent salaries--amounting to 8 per cent of oil revenue in 1975.[2]

The basis of legitimation of the ruling family is based upon dependence of the community on oil revenue and the ability of the ruling family to manipulate these revenues. The wealth of the nation has filtered down to the population from the ruling family, friends of the family, servants, and so on to the periphery of the population. What has emerged within the indigenous population is a stratification system essentially based on distance from the ruling family. The range of stratification is reflected in Table 25 below.

Table 25 demonstrates that within the indigenous population, 5.5 per cent of the households capture 31.6 per cent of the total income. For households in the K.D. 1,000 or more income bracket, 17.4 per cent of the income is derived from wages, 42.2 per cent from private business,

---

[1] The Middle East and North Africa, p.434.

[2] al-Rumaihi, Social and Economic Obstacles to Development in the Contemporary Arab Gulf, p.16.

Table 25:
Distribution of Kuwaiti Income Levels
By Proportion of Income Captured,
Persons, Households,
1972/1973

Income Per Month (K.D.)	Percentage		
	Income	Persons	Households
Less than 50	0.5	3.5	5.5
50 - 99	1.5	4.7	7.0
100 - 149	4.9	9.9	13.6
150 - 199	9.2	17.3	18.7
200 - 249	7.9	12.9	12.8
250 - 299	7.2	9.7	9.4
300 - 399	10.0	11.7	10.3
400 - 599	15.4	13.8	11.5
600 - 999	11.8	8.3	5.8
1000+	31.6	8.2	5.5
	100.0	100.0	100.0

Source: Kuwait Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.224.

and 40.4 per cent from other sources (i.e., income from investments).[3] Only in the 12.5 per cent of the households whose monthly income was less than K.D. 100 per month did wages contribute to less than 50 per cent of income. This group captured only two per cent of total Kuwaiti household income. Wages contributed 42 per cent, private business 22.4 per cent, and other sources (i.e., welfare assistance) contributed 35.6 per cent.[4] This is in contrast to the middle income brackets--K.D. 100 to K.D. 599--which comprised 76.3 per cent of Kuwaiti households and 54.6 per cent of income, where wages constituted an average of 76.1 per cent of total monthly income.[5] In the 5.8 per cent of households whose monthly income was between K.D. 600 and K.D. 999, wages constituted an average of 51.2 per cent of total monthly income, private business 16.0 per cent, and other sources 20.1 per cent.[6] This group captured 11.8 per cent of total Kuwaiti household income.

---

[3] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.225.

Capital in Kuwait, then, is highly concentrated in the hands of the ruling family and wealthy merchant families who have direct and indirect interests in virtually all of the private and quasi-private establishments in the country. Commenting on the concentration of wealth within a few families, one observer noted:[7]

> It is as if such a merchant is repeating what Caliph Ma'Awiyah said one day: 'Go, O dinar, wherever you wish because wherever you drop it will be in one of my pockets.'

---

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Al-Hawadith (Beirut), January 31, 1975.

As might be expected, the non-Kuwaiti stratification structure is in sharp contrast to this, as indicated in Table 26, below.

Table 26:
Distribution of Non-Kuwaiti Income Levels
by Proportion of Income Captured,
Persons, Households,
1972/73

Income Per Month (K.D.)	Percentage		
	Income	Persons	Households
Less than 50	1.1	4.9	5.5
50-69	2.2	7.3	7.5
70 - 99	6.0	14.7	14.6
100 - 149	12.6	22.2	20.9
150 - 199	13.8	16.3	16.1
200 - 249	11.2	10.2	10.3
250 - 299	10.2	7.3	7.6
300 - 399	13.8	7.8	8.1
400 - 599	15.1	6.5	6.5
600 - 999	7.8	2.2	2.2
1000+	6.2	0.6	0.7
	100.0	100.0	100.0

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.224.

Table 26 demonstrates that the distribution of households by income level is not as polarized at the upper income level as in the Kuwaiti case. The middle income brackets--K.D. 100 to K.D. 599--represented 69.5 per cent of non-Kuwaiti households and captured 76.7 per cent of total non-Kuwaiti income. Furthermore, non-Kuwaiti households earning less than K.D. 100 per month represented 27.6 per cent of total non-Kuwaiti households and captured 9.3 per cent of total non-Kuwaiti household income; 80.5 per cent of this income was derived from wages. Only in the 0.7 per cent of non-Kuwaiti households earning K.D. 1000 or more per month did wages as a source of income constitute a minor portion of income--12.6 per cent. For this group, income from private business provided the main source of income, 58.4 per cent, and other sources (i.e., investment income) 29.0 per cent.[8]

A comparison of the income stratification structures of Kuwaitis and non-Kuwaitis reveals that non-Kuwaitis are primarily wage earners concentrated in the lower half of the income distribution hierarchy, with income from wages constituting 70.0 per cent of total non-Kuwaiti household income. Kuwaitis wage-earners, on the other hand, are concentrated in the upper half of the income distribution hierarchy. Income from wages constituted only 53.8 per cent of total Kuwaiti household income, but only for the uppermost income brackets did income from sources other than wages constitute a major portion of income. Kuwaitis in the uppermost brackets form a small capitalist class in Kuwait whose income derives from private business or investments.

For Kuwaitis, the degree of inequality within Kuwait is mediated by the welfare system which buffers them against all the economic vicissitudes of personal responsibility and impersonal misfortune. What this paternalistic welfare system has done is to transform the indigenous population into a leisure class with a capacity for consumption of luxury foreign goods and a dependence upon the ruling class to sustain the consumption level. In effect, it has served to mitigate the creation of class consciousness within the Kuwaiti population. Although economic and social stratification have increased substantially as a result of the distribution of oil wealth, Kuwaiti nationals are a priviléged ethnic minority--the largest ethnic minority group--within Kuwait. The humblest Kuwaiti has more rights, greater economic and social security and better opportunities for social mobility than a highly skilled non-Kuwaiti.

---

[8] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.225.

For non-Kuwaitis, the ethnic stratification system also serves to mitigate class consciousness by reinforcing ethnic cohesion and fragmenting class cohesion. Non-Arab immigrants are essentially at the very periphery of Kuwait's social, economic and political spheres. The bulk of the non-Arab immigrant labour force are from India, Pakistan and Iran (in 1975, 95 per cent).[9] They are concentrated in menial service and manual occupations in the private sector where wages are low and working conditions degrading.

---

[9] *Ibid.*, pp.91-93.

Ineligible for housing subsidies or limited income housing, they live in shack towns that fringe the city or in some of the barrack-type projects designed as temporary accommodations. Fragmented among themselves by language, cultural and religious differences, however, and in a very insecure position in terms of their tenure in Kuwait, they appear to have been largely ineffective in organizing to improve their lot.

Indeed, when a labour strike broke out among these groups in 1969 to protest the discriminatory labour laws and resulted in violence, the government deported hundreds of Arabs rather than the demonstrators. The government's rationale behind the deportations was that:[10]

> . . . the workers' strike was provoked by certain 'destructive elements,' because most of the demonstrators were Pakistanis, Indians, and Iranians who were not familiar with the Arabic language. How then could they write statements in a complicated, doctrinal style? The government circles then went on to say that the strike was intended to paralyze oil production and to spread to other sectors for the purpose of creating economic confusion as well as chaotic conditions. The government accuses 'Arab partisan elements' of instigating strikes and destructive activities.

This points up the government's fears of the political and social role of its Arab immigrant population.

---

[10] al-Nahar (Beirut), February 12, 1969.

Sharing the same language and the same cultural and religious heritage, Arab immigrants can cooperate with each other and operate within the Kuwaiti social milieux. Denied access to legitimate political participation, they nevertheless have considerable input into the decision-making process by virtue of their professional and technical occupations. Also, they are a highly politicized group who have the skills, the time and the financial resources to afford dabbling in politics. They are the middle class agents of social and political change as much as the instruments of economic change. Controlling their role in the society while promoting their role in the economy has taken considerable rationalization of the social control process.

The Rationalization of Social Control: Planning

The Development Board, created in 1952, was the first manifestation of planning in Kuwait. Although its terms of reference were to guide national development, at this time the concept of planning in Kuwait focussed on physical development and not the "financial, economic and social aspects of a comprehensive development policy."[11]

---

[11] The Economic Development of Kuwait, p.97.

Thus, the sudden inflow of wealth in the early fifties resulted in large-scale construction and expansion projects--schools, hospitals, roads, port facilities, office buildings--and in grandiose schemes of physical modernization of old Kuwait City. Essentially the entire core of the city was bought up by the government at enormous expense and developed for public use or resold at considerable loss for private development. This policy had a two-fold purpose--to pump public money into the private sector and to facilitate the reconstruction of the city.

The rapid development of Kuwait City was not only transforming the city physically, however. By the mid-fifties, it was apparent that the entire social structure of the society--the role and distribution of both capital and labour, the demographic composition of the population--had undergone rapid transformation. These transformations had contributed to the increasing isolation of the ruling family within the polity since its power and wealth were rendered independent of the social structure by the new integration. This isolation was manifested in growing opposition from all sectors of the society to the status quo of autocracy. It was in this context of increasing isolation that the concept of planning as an institutionalized social control function was initiated.

The concept of comprehensive planning in terms of short-term and long-term inter-related economic and social goals became manifest in 1961 when the government invited the International Bank for Reconstruction and Development to send an economic mission to Kuwait. The mission in 1961 was followed up by another in 1963. These missions made a comprehensive survey of the potentials of and limitations to economic development in Kuwait and recommendations regarding investment policies and rationalization of public administration.[12] Most of the recommendations never became incorporated into government policy. Most significant here, however, is the fact that as a result of the mission's recommendations, the planning process itself became institutionalized to ensure social stability through rationalization of the allocation of oil revenues.

In 1962, a centralized Planning Board was established as an independent body directly attached to the Council of Ministers. The Prime Minister was to function as Chairman and the Minister of Finance and Industry as Deputy Chairman.[13]

---

[12] For a summary of the recommendations, see Chapter 1 of the missions' report, The Economic Development of Kuwait.

[13] *Ibid.*, p.99.

Its other members included the Ministers of Public Works, Education, Social Affairs and Commerce, the Minister of State for Cabinet Affairs and four prominent Kuwaitis from the private sector.[14] The Board was given comprehensive powers for the "formulation of the general economic, social and population policy, and the establishment of development programs and the supervision of their implementation."[15] This broad mandate was to be manifested in a series of five-year plans. The first one was completed and adopted in 1967 to span the period to 1971/72.

The first five year plan explicated the long-term objectives of planning in terms of several unassailable, abstract goals. These included: 1) the creation of a diversified economy with a self-sustaining rate of growth; 2) insuring an equitable distribution of income; 3) insuring the training of human resources for the development of specialized skills; 4) the achievement of Arab economic integration.[16] The operationalization of these goals in terms of priorities and policies to be pursued over the planning period, however, more clearly specified the social control nature of the plan's objectives. These included: 1) increasing the scope of the public services infrastructures--a principal mechanism of rendering the interests of the Kuwaiti population dependent upon the ruling class; 2) replacing non-Kuwaiti occupational elite with Kuwaitis by increasing the level of education of the Kuwaiti population; 3) stemming the growth in the proportion of the non-Kuwaiti population by increasing Kuwaiti participation in the labour force and upgrading their skills through training; 4) promoting the integration of private capital and public expenditure.[17]

---

[14] Kuwait Today, p.87. The composition of the Board was changed in December 1970 to the following: Prime Minister, Minister of State for Cabinet Affairs, Minister of Finance and Oil, Minister of Social Affairs and Labour; Minister of Public Works, Minister of Education, Chairman of the Municipal Council, ten members of different professions from the private sector to be appointed by decree for four years. Decree Concerning the Planning Board, December, 1970.

[15] Muhammed Ali al-Farra, al-Tanmiyah al-Iqtisadiyah fi Dawlat al-Kuwayt (Economic Development and the State of Kuwait), (Kuwait: Jami'at al-Kuwayt, n.d.), p.195.

The social control of marginalized labour was explicated in the plan in terms of the priority of human resource development. The plan explained this accordingly:[18]

---

[16] The First Five Year Development Plan, 1967/68 - 1971/72, pp.7-10.

[17] These objectives are given in terms of the formulation of specific policies, delineated in chapter 6 of The First Five Year Development Plan.

[18] Ibid., pp.58-59.

> In spite of the integration and interrelation of the Plan's objectives, the greatest emphasis during the Plan period will relate to manpower in the Kuwaiti society. The objectives here are to raise productivity, increase the participation of the Kuwaitis in the total labour force, diversify skills and produce specializations among the Kuwaiti labour force. Briefly this means an attempt to make the members of the Kuwaiti labour force more efficient, more productive and more capable of realizing the projections and expectations of the Plan.

In post-oil Kuwait, institutionalized education had been rapidly developing as the major socialization agency of the state. The emphasis placed upon it in the Plan rationalized the expanding role of education to include not only socialization to consumerism in the capital surplus economy but also socialization to competitive labour market principles in the consumer society. This rationalization took on the neutral title of human resource development.

Human Resource Development

Kuwait's public educational system began rapid expansion in 1954 when there were only 41 schools in the nation. The foundations of the present educational system were laid in 1955 under the guidance of two prominent Egyptian educationists. In addition to an educational hierarchy that funnels students through an academic stream there also are programs of vocational education.

The Educational Hierarchy. In addition to a kindergarten program, three stages of education were established--primary, intermediate, secondary--that last four years each. The goals of this educational program were two-fold: at the lower levels to eliminate illiteracy in the young population and at the upper levels of post-secondary education to prepare them for careers in the modern work force. Between 1958 and 1965, enrollment at the primary level increased from 22,118 to 44,131; at the intermediate level from 6,530 to 19,006; at the secondary level from 1,270 to 4,823.[19] To encourage enrollment of children in the school system, all clothing, books, transportation and meals were provided free of charge.

By 1965, 76.5 per cent of Kuwait's labour force was non-Kuwaiti,[20] and educational expansion assumed a new urgency. In that year, education between the ages of six to fourteen was made compulsory for all Kuwaitis to ensure minimum skills in future generations.[21] However, popular resistance to compulsory education in general, and female education in particular (even though education at all levels is segregated), made this difficult to achieve within the short-term. Rather than attempting to enforce this law against popular resistance, the government undertook a vigorous program through the mass media and instituted a reward system for educational achievement to overcome resistance to education. By the 1975/76 academic year there were 92,240 students enrolled at the primary level, 59,767 at the intermediate level, and 29,962 at the secondary level.[22] Although the percentage of the school age population actually enrolled cannot be ascertained, nevertheless, by the 1975 census, illiteracy in the 10-19 age bracket of Kuwaiti nationals had been reduced to 21.6 per cent (and 74.0 per cent of these were females),[23] compared with 40.0 per cent illiteracy in this age bracket in 1957.[24]

---

[19] Statistical Abstract, 1973 (Kuwait: Central Statistical Office, 1973), p.78.

[20] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.81.

[21] Development of Education in Kuwait, (Kuwait: Ministry of Guidance and Information, 1975), p.7.

Aside from overcoming resistance to compulsory education, Kuwait has faced three related problems in the rapid expansion of its public education system: 1) the rapid expansion of the school age population as a result of the high birth rate and rapid settlement of desert hinterland tribes; correlatively, 2) the increasing need for adequate physical facilities; 3) the increasing need for qualified teachers. Between 1957 and 1975 Kuwait's indigenous population increased from 107,246 to 472,088. Furthermore, in this period the 5-14 year age group increased as a proportion of the population from 24.0 per cent to 29.9 per cent.[25] In addition, by the late sixties sectors of the immigrant population were successfully pressing their demands for access to public education. Between 1967 and 1977, non-Kuwaiti enrollment in government schools increased from 26.3 per cent to 45.5 per cent of total enrollment.[26]

---

[22] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1976 (Kuwait: Central Statistical Office, 1976), p.300.

[23] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.33.

[24] Kuwait Population Census, 1957 (Kuwait: Office of Social Affairs), p.227. In Arabic.

The pressure on facilities and teaching staff has been met by huge budget allocations to education. Expenditures on education have steadily increased from about K.D. 6.5 million in 1955/56[27] to K.D. 62 million in 1974/75 (about 14 per cent of total government expenditures).[28] Because of its capital surplus situation, then, Kuwait can afford to import both the materials and labour to facilitate rapid educational expansion. Reflecting this ability to meet the material and staff requirements of continuously expanding enrollment, between 1967/68 and 1976/77, the average number of students per classroom at the primary level actually decreased from 34.8 to 30.9, and the number of students per teacher similarly decreased from 22.3 to 16.4; at the intermediate level in this period, the students per teacher from 16.7 to 13.1; finally, at the secondary level, the students per classroom decreased from 31.1 to 28.7, and the students per teacher from 11.7 to 9.2.[29]

---

[25] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.40-41.

[26] Ibid., p.348.

[27] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1973, p.94. The conversion rate of Kuwaiti Dinars to U.S. dollars in 1964 was K.D. 1 = $2.8.

[28] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1975, p.285.

By offering high salaries and a high standard of living, Kuwait has siphoned off the available talent from neighboring Arab countries to staff its expanding educational system. In 1957, virtually the entire staff of teachers (89.6 per cent) at all levels of education was non-Kuwaiti.[30] However, in addition to sending students abroad for teacher training, in the early sixties Kuwait developed its own system of teacher training institutes, the first graduates of which entered the profession in 1965. Since then, the number of Kuwaiti teachers has increased rapidly. Between 1971/72 and 1976/77, for example, the number of Kuwaiti teachers at the primary, intermediate and secondary levels increased from 2,767[31] to 4,402.[32] Nevertheless, the educational system was expanding more rapidly than the production of teachers, and the proportion of Kuwaiti teachers at these levels actually decreased from 32.3 per cent in 1971/72 to 27.7 per cent in 1976/77.

---

[29] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.343-344.

[30] Kuwait Population Census, 1957, pp.282-286.

The task set for the educational hierarchy in terms of career preparation is on the one hand to remove the young from family and environmental influences that foster traditional collective attitudes towards work and status, and on the other to socialize the young to the individualistic achievement oriented norms of occupational mobility--to instill a set of skills, attitudes, motivations and career preferences that are compatible with national political, economic and social development programs. The first task has been undertaken by developing a system of kindergarten education for four to six year olds. The first kindergarten was founded in 1954; and by 1963 there were twenty kindergartens with an enrollment of 6,000 children. From 1964 to 1975, the number of kindergartens increased to 52, with a total enrollment by 1975 of 12,582.

---

[31] Statistical Abstract, 1972 (Kuwait: Central Statistical Office, 1972), p.93.

[32] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.349.

During this period, the student-teacher ratio was progressively lowered from 22.3 in 1964/65 to 12.6 by 1974/75.[33] Within the kindergarten setting, young children learn to work with their hands through handicraft lessons, learn to care for small animals (rabbits, pigeons, ducks, chickens) and learn individual responsibility in interpersonal and task-oriented exercises that are isolated from the ascriptive, particularistic and protective family environment.

The development of competitive, achievement-oriented norms and attitudes of individualistic career alternatives, preferences and choices is systematized at the primary and intermediate stages of education. While the four years of primary school are aimed at instilling basic language and math skills, at the intermediate level emphasis is placed upon the discovery and development of individual aptitudes and talents, and their relationship to occupational alternatives. At the secondary stage, then, students are streamed into either arts or science studies.[34]

Completing the structure of the educational hierarchy, in 1966 the University of Kuwait opened its doors. With an initial enrollment of 500 students, by the 1975/76 academic year the university accommodated 5,832 students at the undergraduate level[35] and 129 at the graduate level (both Masters and Ph.D.).[36] Between 1972/73 and 1975/76, the university graduated 2,347 students (60.5 per cent Kuwaitis by nationality). The distribution of these graduates by field of study was 18.8 per cent in the sciences, 41.4 per cent in literature, 7.4 per cent in law, 20.1 per cent in commerce, and 12.3 per cent in economics and political science.[37] In 1975/76, the university opened a Department of Petroleum Engineering, and in 1976/77 a medical school.

---

[33] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1975, p.296.

[34] Development of Education in Kuwait, p.10.

Other post secondary institutions are also available that are more job-specific than university education. These include the Teachers' Training College, the Agricultural Institute, Arab Planning Institute, Banking Studies Center, and the Civil Aviation Training Center. All of these institutes suffer from under-capacity enrollment, high costs of operation, and low productivity in terms of number of completers.[38]

---

[35] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.364.

[36] Ibid., p.368.

[37] Ibid., p.366.

[38] James A. Socknat, An Inventory and Assessment of Employment-Oriented Human Resources Development Programs in the Gulf Area (Manama, Bahrain: The Ford Foundation, 1975), Appendices 1-5. Unpublished Report.

The performance of Kuwait's educational hierarchy in terms of upgrading the educational status of Kuwaiti nationals may be assessed from the Table 21, below.

Table 21:
Kuwaitis 10 Years and Over
by Educational Status,
1957 and 1975

Educational Status	1957	1975
Primary Certificate	1,077	66,188
Intermediate Certificate	-	35,415
Secondary Certificate and below University level	197	16,603
First University and Post Graduate Degrees	51	3,979

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.35.

Considered in terms of the distribution of the population by educational qualification, these increases represented a 20.6 per cent increase in primary certificate holders between 1957 and 1975, an 11.8 per cent increase in intermediate certificate holders, a 5.2 per cent increase in secondary certificate holders, and a 1.2 per cent increase in university degree holders. Thus, over the period, the educational status of Kuwaitis has increased not only in terms of absolute number, but also as proportions of a rapidly expanding population.

Nevertheless, the educational status distribution is less than expected given the enrollment figures over the

17 year period from 1958 to 1975. The enrollment figures are somewhat misleading as they mask the high drop out and repeater rates. Over the period, drop outs between the primary and intermediate levels have ranged between 30 - 40 per cent, while drop outs between the intermediate and secondary level have ranged between 40 - 50 per cent. Reflecting the high repeater rate, it was estimated that the twelve years of education from primary through secondary school cost the state a total of K.D. 4,508 per student, assuming continual progress of the student through the curriculum; in actuality, it was found that the student required an average of eighteen years instead of twelve years to complete the curriculum, increasing the cost per student 37 per cent.[39]

The performance of Kuwait's educational hierarchy in terms of preparing Kuwaitis for participation in the labour force may be considered in terms of labour force participation in 1975. Considered in terms of the distribution of Kuwaiti males 15 years and over by age groups, 47.2 per cent of the 15 - 24 age group was in the labour force, 93.9 per cent of the 25 - 49 age group and 59.0

---

[39] Proposals of the Five Year Plan, 1976/77-1980/81, p.16.

per cent of the 50+ age group.[40] Because of extension of the educational process, Kuwaitis enter the labour force at a later age than previously. Furthermore, early retirement policies and liberal pension benefits greatly reduce participation in the 50+ population. In the active labour force group 25 - 49, there is 6.1 per cent non-participation--a high figure for males in this age group.

However, if females are included, the percentages for labour force participation are cut almost in half in every age category. In 1975 there were only 7,477 Kuwaiti females in the labour force, even though they comprise approximately 50 per cent of the total Kuwaiti population and approximately 43 per cent of Kuwaiti enrollment in the public school system. Cultural constraints have been major barriers to female participation, and the state's comprehensive welfare system has obviated economic factors as a cause of female participation.

Nevertheless, the heavy dependence upon immigrant labour has led to government efforts to overcome cultural barriers that keep half the population inactive. The First Five Year Plan outlined as an objective of population policy "encouraging the participation of Kuwaiti females in occupations which are better suited to the nature of women, by offering them priority in employment."[41] Between 1965 and 1975, in fact, Kuwaiti female participation in the Kuwaiti labour force increased from 2.5 per cent to 8.1 per cent.[42] This increase, however, was virtually confined to social services (which accounted for 80.8 per cent of female Kuwaiti employment in 1975).[43] In fact, the increase in female employment within the Kuwaiti population reflects the labour market demands emerging from sexually segregated social service structures. Hence female professionals and service workers--teachers, social welfare workers, etc.--are needed to service the female population in a segregated welfare system. Outside these structures, there has been virtually no growth of Kuwaiti female participation.

---

[40] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.33, 83.

In contrast, the participation of non-Kuwaiti females in the non-Kuwaiti labour force increased from 5.4 per cent in 1962 to 13.0 per cent in 1975.[44] While 45.2 per cent of this labour force component was concentrated in the social service sector, 43.8 per cent was in personal and household services[45] (reflecting the personal service demands of an affluent population).

---

[41] Ibid., p.133.

[42] Ibid., p.82.

[43] Ibid., p.85.

[44] Ibid., p.82.

Of the total Kuwaiti male labour force of 84,367, 5.5 per cent were classified as unemployed at the time of the census in 1975. This is a relatively high figure for a nation that depends heavily upon immigrant labour and is committed to lessening this dependence. However, 90.1 per cent of the unemployed males were in the 15 - 29 age bracket--i.e., those groups that have had the greatest exposure to educational opportunities. Unemployment in this age range may reflect the government's withdrawal of guaranteed employment for Kuwaitis in the public sector irrespective of skills for new entrants into the labour force.

Vocational Education. The programs of vocational education in Kuwait are specifically employment oriented, in contrast to the educational hierarchy which is academically or professionally oriented. These programs are designed to pick up the high number of drop outs from the academic system for semi-skilled and skilled occupational preparation, and to provide the unskilled and semi-skilled with occupational mobility options. The following are the major vocational institutions:

---

[45] Ibid., p.85.

1. The Technological Institute, opened in 1954, admits graduates of primary and intermediate schools. A total of eighty students were initially admitted to receive education in four sections: general mechanics, automechanics, electricity and architecture. By 1975, the Institute had expanded to accommodate 786 students in sixteen different departments. Reflecting Kuwait's attempt to establish a petro-chemical industry, the most important specialty offered was in petro-chemicals. Two distinct levels of education are offered: craftsmen and technicians.[46] Total enrollment in 1976/77 was 106.[47]

2. The Secondary Commercial Institute, opened in 1952 as an evening school, was expanded in the mid-sixties to include both intermediate level education in the evenings for employed and out-of-school persons and a secondary level curriculum in commercial education of four years duration in the day-time for male students.[48] Total enrollment in the 1975/76 academic year was 394 in the day program and 745 in the evening program.[49]

---

[46] Development of Education in Kuwait, pp.11-14.

[47] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.345.

[48] Socknat, Appendix 6.

[49] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.345.

3. Secondary Institute for Girls, established in 1963/64. It is a four-year program offered to intermediate certificate holders and offers four areas of specializations: secretarial, social services, home economics, science laboratory technicians.[50] Total enrollment in the 1975/76 academic year was 199.[51]

4. The Institute of Public Health, established in 1962, offers a three-year course in staff nursing for intermediate certificate holders (plus an optional fourth year in midwifery), and a two year course in assistant nursing for primary certificate holders.[52] Total enrollment in 1975/76 was 129.[53]

5. The Industrial Training Center, opened in 1971, admits students with intermediate certificates. It offers a one-year preparatory course, then nine specialized courses of one-year duration in various areas of machine maintenance and repair, electrical trades, air-conditioning and refrigeration. It also has two two-year programs: radio and television maintenance and instrument fitters

---

[50] Socknat, Appendix 22.

[51] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.345.

[52] Socknat, Appendix 12.

[53] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.345.

for process industries.[54] Total enrollment in 1975/76 was 462.[55]

In addition to the above institutes, there are a variety of job-oriented and work-study programs offered by various ministries. In 1975, James A. Socknat, under the auspices of the Ford Foundation, completed a comprehensive inventory of employment-oriented development programs in the Gulf area. He identified seven programs operating in Kuwait for skilled manual work preparation:

1. The Fire Fighting School, which in March 1973 had an enrollment of eighty students, and between 1968/69 and 1971/72 had graduated a total of 126 students. Further details unknown.

2. The Institute of Applied Engineering, opened by the Ministry of Public Works in 1968. The program is of two year duration, followed by six weeks of job training. In the second year, students specialize in either building and construction or road and drainage engineering. From 1968/69 to 1971/72 the program graduated 81 trainees.

3. The Ministry of Information Training Program, initiated in 1958 for printing press trainees, by 1971 included training in radio and television, carpentry, and

---

[54] Socknat, Appendix 9.

[55] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.345.

drama. Total number of completers of the various programs in unknown; however, between 1968/69 and 1971/72, the printing press program had 235 graduates.

4. An on-the-job training program for supervisors is offered by the Ministry of Public Works. Duration of the program is unknown; between 1968/69 and 1971/72, 47 trainees had completed it.

5. The Telecommunications Training Institute, established by the Ministry of Post, Telephone and Telegraph in 1966. The Institute offers two programs of one year duration: traffic and assistant technician (includes six months of on-the-job training). It also offers a two-year program which specializes in one of the following areas: satellites, telephone techniques, radar and wireless maintenance. Between 1968/69 and 1971/72, the Institute graduated 659 students.

6. An on-the-job training program in gold and silver control is offered by the Ministry of Commerce and Industry. Further details unknown.

7. The Water Resources Development Center of the Ministry of Water and Electricity offers one year training programs for technicians and assistant technicians in operation and maintenance of generators and water distribution systems. The program was initiated in 1969/70, and by August 1974 had graduated 250 trainees.

The vocational institutes and programs are restricted to Kuwaiti nationals and except for the secondary institutes, generally offer a monthly stipend to trainees of between K.D. 40 - 80 per month. In addition to the general proliferation of programs, these programs suffer from a number of problems: overlapping and duplication of curricula, the expense of operation (in part due to the high drop out rates, low program output and under-capacity operation), and competition among the programs to attract students. To provide coordination for training programs, in 1973 Kuwait established a Central Training Department which assumed admission and budget functions for most vocational institutes and programs in 1975.[56] In the 1976/77 academic year, there was a total enrollment of 4,058 in vocational institutes and 2,318 in special training programs.[57]

The contribution of the vocational education institutes and programs may be assessed in terms of Kuwaiti participation in semi-skilled and skilled labour in both white collar and manual occupations. Most of these occupations fall within two occupational classifications: clerical and related workers, and production and related workers and labourers. Between 1957 and 1975, there was a five-fold increase--from 7,657 to 38,018--in the size of the labour force classified under clerical and related workers. Kuwaiti participation in this occupational category increased from 42.2 per cent in 1957 to 47.0 per cent in 1975.[58] In the same period, the amount of labour classified under production and related workers more than doubled--from 49,623 to 105,608. However, Kuwaiti participation in this category decreased from 22.5 per cent in 1957 to 14.5 per cent in 1975.[59]

---

[56] Socknat, pp.14-17.

[57] Ibid.

These figures reflect the preference of Kuwaitis for white collar jobs, and their ability to secure white collar jobs in the public sector due to government employment policies that preferentially hire and promote Kuwaitis over non-Kuwaitis in the civil service. The effective result is that the Kuwaiti labour force is highly concentrated in the civil service--accounting for approximately 72 per cent of total Kuwaiti employment in 1975.

It appears, then, that training in manual occupations has been somewhat irrelevant to the occupations actually undertaken. While no follow-up studies of institute graduates and program trainees are available, one survey reported that 60 per cent of the graduates of training institutes preferred supervisory jobs over the manual occupations they were trained for, and 49.2 per cent would not accept manual labour.[60]

---

[58] Ibid., p.95.

[59] Ibid.

Commercial education, then, appears more relevant to the kinds of jobs Kuwaitis actually enter. It may also be more relevant to the occupational structure emerging from Kuwait's social and economic development policies. This is reflected in Table 22, below.

Table 22:
Percentage Distribution of the
Labour Force, by
Occupational Division, 1957 and 1975

	1957	1975	% Change
Professional and Technical Workers	4.4%	14.0%	+ 9.6
Administrative and Managerial Workers	1.5	1.0	- 0.5
Clerical and Related Workers	9.0	12.7	+ 3.7
Sales Workers	7.1	8.1	+ 1.0
Service Workers	11.0	26.2	- 15.2
Agricultural, Animal Husbandry, Fishermen and Hunters	1.5	2.6	+ 1.1
Production and Related Workers	58.0	35.4	- 22.6
Not Adequately Defined	7.5	-	- 7.5
Total	100.0%	100.0%	

Source: Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, p.95.

---

[60] Rumaihi, pp.28-30.

Table 22 demonstrates that while production and related workers is still the largest single occupational division, it has significantly decreased as a proportion of the division of labour. Clerical and related workers and sales workers, on the other hand, have both increased. The greatest change occurred in service workers--a category of generally menial personal service occupations that are occupied by non-Kuwaiti labour (except for fire fighters, policemen and detectives which had been completely Kuwaitized by 1975).[61] This category, then, reflects more the demand for personal services resulting from the affluence of the Kuwaiti population than substantive changes in the mode of production.

Professional vs. Vocational Education. The substantial increase in the proportion of professional and technical workers, on the other hand, does reflect the increasingly technocratic organization of Kuwait resulting from capital surplus investment policies and welfare state organization. The proliferation of post-secondary educational facilities, in spite of the relatively limited production of secondary certificate holders, may indeed be related to the importance of this category.

This importance stems not only from the increasing proportion of professional and technical workers in the division of labour, but also from the role this group plays in terms of policy formulation and implementation. The carrying out of government goals of economic and social development depends to a large extent on program formulation and implementation at the level of highly skilled professional and technical elite, and these levels are dominated by immigrants. As noted earlier, the question of the social and political impact of a non-Kuwaiti elite dominating the occupational structure is a central one in Kuwait. Thus, a primary concern of the educational system is to replace skilled immigrant professionals and technicians with Kuwaitis.

---

[61] Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977, pp.91-93.

One of the problems with vocational education is that the educational process itself builds in a bias towards higher status occupations, in effect reinforcing negative status-conscious attitudes towards manual labour. This may be a secondary (albeit significant) concern in Kuwait, however, as economic development plans recognize that the nation's economy will be substantially dependent upon immigrant labour into the long-term future.[62] The more immediate problem, and one identified by The First Five Year Plan,[63] seems to be the dependence at highly skilled technical and professional levels; a dependence that is certainly not amenable to rapid solution, but one that may be served by biases built into the educational process and supported by welfare policies.

---

[62] The First Five Year Development Plan, pp.97-98.

[63] Ibid., p.5.

The Second Five Year Plan

The second five year plan covers the period 1976/77 - 1980/81. Unlike its predecessor, this plan was never officially adopted as national policy because the National Assembly was suspended in 1976. Nevertheless, its projections serve as the basis of policy guidelines and it is in effect being implemented.

In the period since the development of the first plan, Kuwait had achieved total sovereignty over oil exploitation and had experienced a tremendous growth in revenue. Furthermore, two Arab-Israeli wars had been fought (June 1967 and October 1973), heightening popular consciousness of the contradiction between the level of wealth in the Arab world and the inability of the area's governments to defend the Arab people against aggression. In addition, American intervention on behalf of Israel during the 1973 war heated the friction between conservative regimes in the area and Arab nationalists. In this situation, social control of the large Arab expatriate population in Kuwait assumed added urgency. This is reflected in the second five year plan's emphasis upon forecasting labour force requirements over the planning period and the extent to which educational production could meet these demands.

In the area of the development of human resources, the plan identified the "strategic" components accordingly:[64]

1. Raising the productivity of available human resources and developing them through education, training and retraining to satisfy labour force demands.

2. Following a selective policy of immigration based upon labour force needs, providing them with social stability and security.

3. Organizing the labour market to ensure a balance between supply and demand in all specializations.

4. Increasing the level of female participation in the labour force in all social and economic sectors.

5. Relating the level of salaries and wages to worker productivity levels, guaranteeing a minimum wage adjusted to the standard of living.

Chart 1, shows the plan's projections of population growth and labour force growth in the planning period. It was estimated that of the 91,844 Kuwaitis in the labour force in 1975, 89,200 would remain in the labour force to the end of the plan period; and 30,400 Kuwaitis would enter the labour force for the first time during the

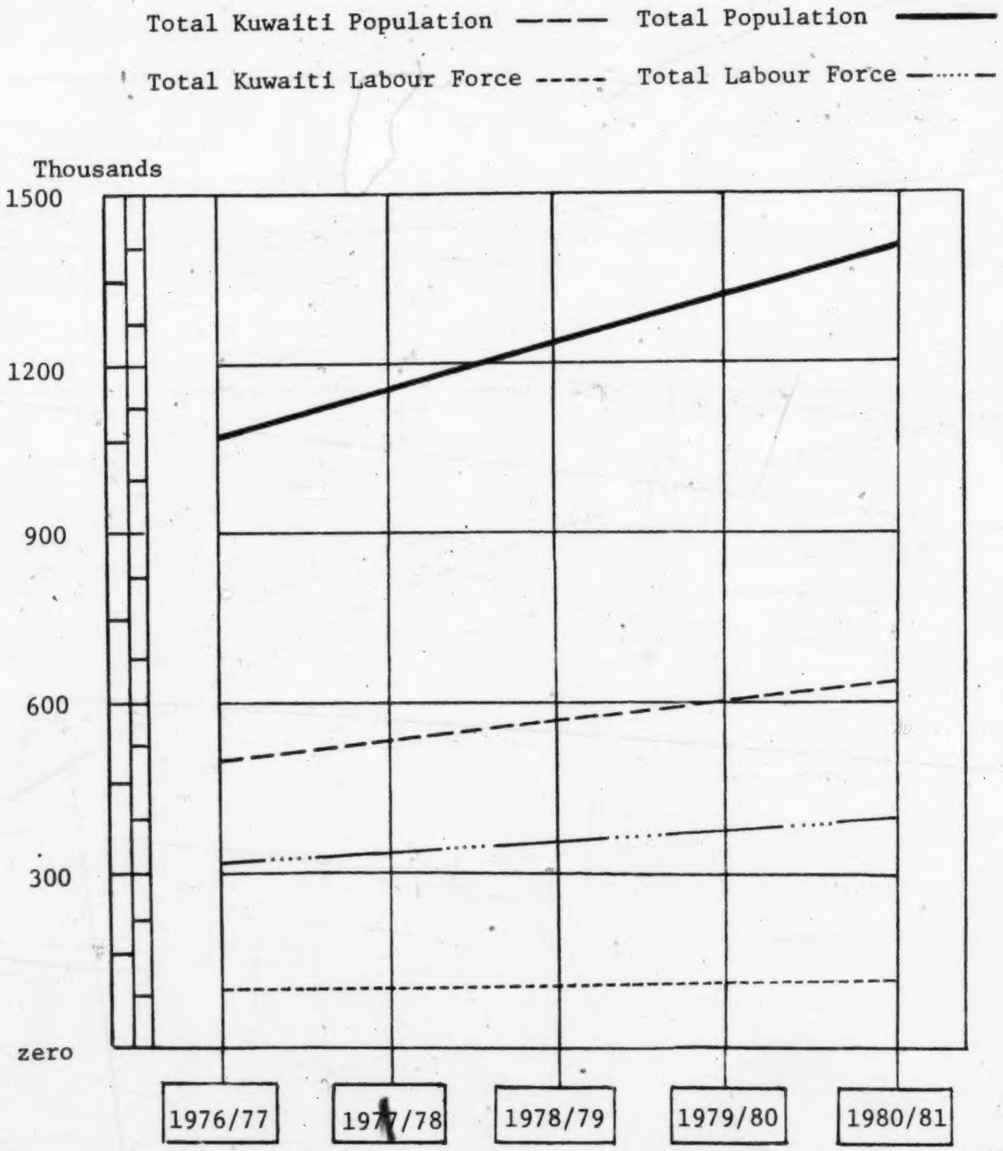
---

[64] Proposal of the Five Year Plan, 1976/77 - 1980/81, p.10.

Chart 1:

Population and the Labour Force

1976/77-1980/81



Source: Proposal of the Five Year Plan,
1976/77 - 1980/81, p. 29.

period. The total Kuwaiti labour force by the end of the plan period, then, would be 119,600. Assuming that the size of the non-Kuwaiti population remained constant over the plan period, and the non-Kuwaiti labour force at the end of the period was 155,000, the plan estimated the size of the total labour force in 1980 to be 274,600. However, based upon economic expansion plans during the period, it was estimated that total demand for labour would be 412,200 by 1980. Hence, immigration would be required to fill the gap of 137,600 workers.[65] These estimates were the basis of the population projection shown in Chart 1, which reflects the anticipated higher growth rate of the non-Kuwaiti population due to immigration. Based upon these projections, by the end of the plan period, then, it was estimated that non-Kuwaitis would comprise 54.4 per cent of total population and 71 per cent of the total labour force.[66]

Table 23, below, shows the origin of demand for labour during the plan period by sectors of economic activity, based upon the expected growth arising from public expenditure on development projects.

Table 23 demonstrates that public administration and defense were anticipated to generate the largest increase

---

[65] Ibid., p.28.

[66] Ibid., p.30.

Table 23:

Estimates of Labour Force Demand, by Kind of Economic Activity, 1980-81

	Supply 1975	Demand 1980-81	Increase in Period Number	Increase in Period Percent
Agriculture	6,671	10,250	3,580	3.1%
Hunting	843	1,500	660	0.6
Crude Oil and Natural Gas	4,476	5,100	620	0.6
Quarrying	383	660	280	0.3
Manufacturing Industries	24,467	34,400	9,930	8.6
Electricity and Water	7,271	12,000	4,730	4.1
Construction	32,256	42,000	9,740	8.5
Wholesale and Retail Trade	39,559	57,000	17,440	15.2
Transport and Storage	11,822	15,400	3,580	3.1
Communications	3,863	5,400	1,540	1.3
Financial Institutions, Insurance and Real Estate	6,523	8,400	1,880	1.6
Public Administration and Defense	68,887	91,600	22,710	19.8
Sanitary Public Services	4,430	6,640	2,210	1.9
Educational Services	29,879	41,950	12,070	10.5
Health Services	12,548	23,300	10,750	9.4
Social Services	1,634	2,100	470	0.4
Recreational and Cultural Services	2,478	3,500	1,020	0.9
Personal and Household Services	39,370	51,000	11,630	10.1
Total	297,360	412,200	114,840	100.0%

Source: Proposal of the Five Year Plan, 1976/77 - 1980/81, p.25.

in demand for labour, 19.8 per cent, in effect reflecting the continued high rate of expansion of government bureaucracy over the period. Wholesale and retail trade was expected to generate the next largest increase in demand, 15.2 per cent, reflecting the anticipated expansion of consumerism in the period. The expected increase in demand for labour from educational services, 10.5 per cent, reflects the emphasis put upon expansion of the educational institution in the plan. Finally, the 10.1 per cent increase in demand for labour from personal household services suggests the anticipated increase in the level of affluence of the Kuwaiti population. Table 24 shows the distribution of demand by occupational groups.

As Table 24 demonstrates, the largest growth in demand is expected to occur in production and related workers and labourers, 30.2 per cent. Since manufacturing industries are only expected to account for 8.3 per cent of the labour force in 1980/81 (Table 23), it may be assumed that most of the demand for this occupational category will come from the social service and public utilities sectors (Table 14), and this is congruent with plan policies for expansion in these sectors.[67] Professional, technical and related workers and service workers are the next two occupational groups in terms of projected labour

---

[67] *Ibid.*, pp.102-114.

Table 24:

Distribution of Total Demand by Major Occupational Groups, 1980-81

	Supply 1975	Demand 1980-81	Increase in Period Number	Increase in Period Percent
Professional, Technical and Related Workers	41,737	69,100	27,360	23.8%
Administrators	2,511	3,450	940	0.9
Clerical and Related Workers	37,602	50,000	12,400	10.8
Sales Workers	24,090	34,530	10,440	9.1
Service Workers	78,191	103,150	24,960	21.7
Agricultural, Animal Husbandry, Fishermen and Hunters	7,697	11,750	4,050	3.5
Production and Related Workers and Labourers	105,532	140,220	34,690	30.2
Total	297,360	412,200	114,840	100.0%

Source: Proposal of the Five Year Plan, 1976/77 - 1980/81, p.27.

force demands. This is also congruent with the expansion of services outlined in the plan.

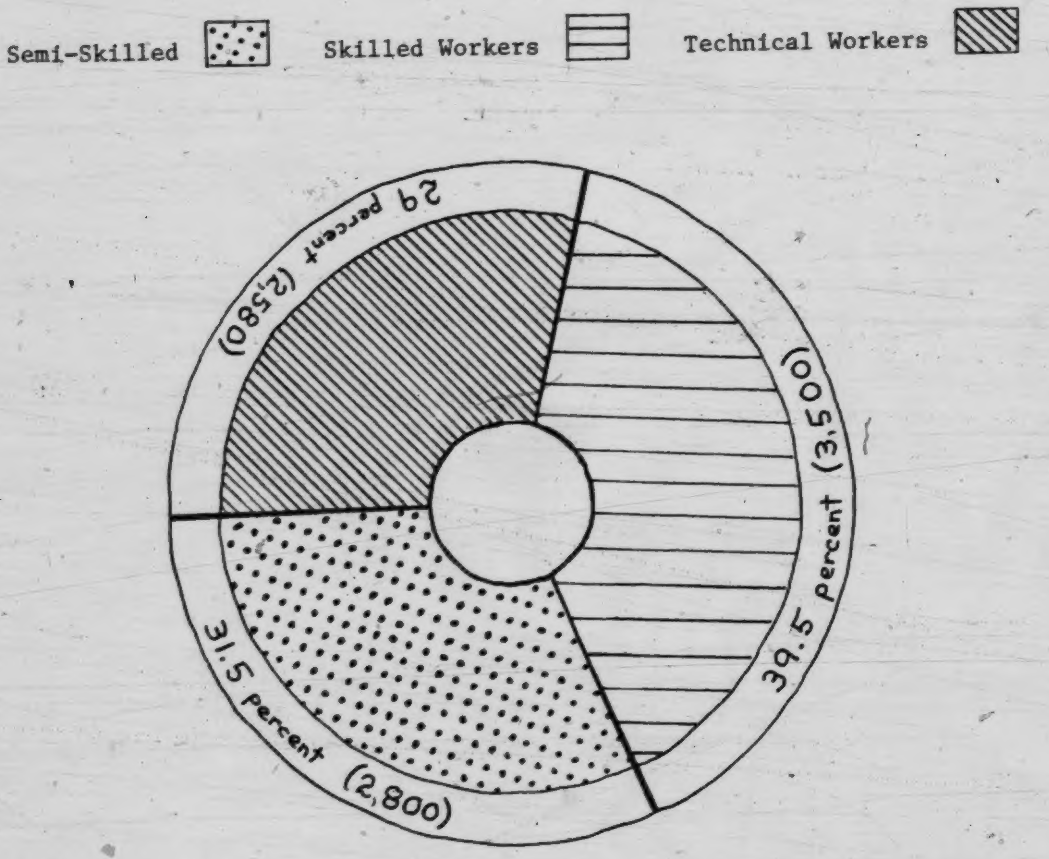
The anticipated distribution of sectoral and occupational demands for labour indicates the continuation of the pattern of growth of Kuwait's economic infrastructure discussed in Chapter VI. The real concern emphasized in the plan was not in terms of the pattern of growth but rather in terms of the source of supply for increasing demand in the "strategic professions," those occupations defined by the plan as requiring "organized training" and whose "practise by citizens is considered essential."[68] These professions were defined as technical, skilled and semi-skilled occupations. The plan called for a substantial increase in enrollment in existing and new training programs for these occupations. Quantitatively, the aims of the "strategic professions" policy are delineated by Chart 2 on the following page. Qualitatively, the aims of a policy for the "strategic professions" was delineated accordingly:[69] 1) to meet the needs of a technical labour force through training and retraining programs; 2) to achieve through the programs both horizontal and vertical mobility in the strategic professions;

---

[68] _Ibid._, p.69.

[69] _Ibid._, pp.73-74.

Chart 2:
The Goals of Training in Strategic Professions
During Plan Period; 1976-1980



Source: Proposal of the Five Year Plan,
1976/77-1980/81, p. 77.

3) to achieve administrative efficiency at the supervisory levels in the strategic professions, concentrating on the level of foremen and heads of departments; 4) to integrate the Kuwaiti labour force in the industrial sector and to create specialized groups indoctrinated with the values of the industrial sector.

Furthermore, the plan outlined the following policies to attract the Kuwaiti labour force away from the soft civil service jobs into the "strategic professions:"[70] 1) the expansion of training opportunities--on-the-job training programs, institutes, training scholarships abroad--that will offer rapid upward mobility; 2) the opening of channels between technical training and professional education; 3) the expansion of training efforts to include the private sector as well as the public sector; 4) the re-assessment of wage and incentive policies that encourage the concentration of the Kuwaiti labour force in white collar civil service jobs; 5) the achievement of integration with Arab exporters of labour to secure an additional source of a trained labour force; 6) the enactment of a system of incentives to encourage the private sector to employ the graduates of training centers and make available to them opportunities for advancement.

---

[70] Ibid., pp.79-80.

Conclusion

The main concern of human resource development, then, is not the Kuwaitization of the labour force, or the return of the Kuwaiti population to majority status. Under the impact of continuing economic expansion--an imperative of peripheral capitalism in a capital surplus society--dependence upon immigrant labour and the consequent increase in non-Kuwaitis as a proportion of the population was recognized as a structural imperative of growth. The plan's concern was with the superordinate-subordinate relationship between Kuwaitis and non-Kuwaitis in the labour force. While the first plan concentrated on the development of a professional cadre of Kuwaitis to function in supervisory capacities vis-a-vis non-Kuwaiti professionals in public administration, the second plan expanded its scope to include supervisory cadres throughout the occupational structure. The social control function was to be exercised through Kuwaitis, a privileged minority in the labour force as well as the population, over non-Kuwaitis, a disenfranchised majority disemboweled from a history in the process of developing.

CHAPTER VIII

CONCLUSION

Among the principal contributions of dependency theory to the study of development in the Third World are 1) identification of the historical process of the development of underdevelopment; and 2) identification of the external mechanisms that induced and perpetuate a situation of capital expropriation from these nations-- asymetrical exchange; integration into a world division of labour, unequal development of productive forces. However, the concentration in dependency research on these external mechanisms has raised the central theoretical question of whether autonomous capitalist development is possible through international adjustments that stem the flow of capital out of these nations. In other words, is dependency a result of capital shortage, or is it a result of class dialectics that obviate autonomous capitalist development, capital shortage being only one symptom of this.

What has to be demonstrated in dependency theory if it is to address this question is that the flow of capital out of the nation and other structural features identified with dependency--progressive subordination of all sectors of the socio-economic infrastructure to the demands of a limited primary commodity export economy; dependence of the productive sector upon the importation of the products of Western technologies; dependence of the internal market on the importation of essential consumer goods; proletarianization of labour; low levels of employment in the productive economic sector (marginalization of labour); rapid growth of the tertiary sector; increasing concentration of wealth and power--are the result of objective class relations fostered by the linkage of imperialist nations with pre-capitalist societies. In addressing the issue of autonomous development, then, we must address the class dialectics that constitutes the dynamic of dependency.

It is this central question of the relationship between capital and labour that structured this examination of Kuwait. Contemporary Kuwait is one of the super-affluent, oil-rich sheikhdoms of the so-called Fourth World. Kuwait, like other nations in this category, occupies an anomalous position in terms of theories of development, underdevelopment and dependency. It is a single-resource dependent, capital-surplus nation, with one of the highest per capita standards of living in the world. By applying dependency theory to Kuwait, this study attempted to address the following questions: 1) the nature of class dynamics in pre-oil Kuwait from the historical perspective, beginning with the foundation and development of the community in the eighteenth century; 2) whether the process of the development of underdevelopment is an historical experience of Kuwait; 3) whether dependency theory is relevant to the study of the capital surplus society; that is, does it provide the analytic categories for examining the historical development of contemporary Kuwait, and for inter-relating the multifaceted features of continuity and change; 4) the nature of class dynamics in contemporary Kuwait. The central focus of the study, then, was not upon the international dynamics of dependency, but upon its internal dynamics as a class phenomenon.

The Underdevelopment of Kuwait

Dependency, as outlined above, has been identified above all as an historical process of the development of underdevelopment. This process, fostered by the imperialist penetration of pre-capitalist societies, induced the integration of these societies into an emerging world division of labour. This integration took the specific form of external domination and narrow specialization of productive forces, resulting, in effect, in expropriation of surplus product. It is this historical process that must be addressed first in the characterization of Kuwait as a dependent mode.

The underdevelopment of Kuwait through its integration into an emerging British colonial system was initiated in the nineteenth century in the context of British imperial policy in the Arab Gulf. By a coup d'etat in 1896, encouraged (if not engineered) by Britain, the dominance of a regionally oriented merchant class was broken. This class had been dynamically linked through their interests in regional commerce to emerging productive centers in the Gulf and along the coast of the Arabian Sea. Throughout the second half of the 19th century, this growing mercantilism was gradually assuming the political form of integration with Ottoman Iraq. By the middle of the century, it was ideologically responding to the decay of the Ottoman empire on the one hand and imperialist penetration of the Gulf on the other in the form of an emerging Arab nationalism.

The interests of the petty commercial class who achieved dominance in their place through the coup d'etat were not dynamically linked to the development of productive forces in the region that was emerging in the 19th century. This class was composed of middlemen merchants between exchange and local subsistence consumption. With increasing British domination throughout the 19th century of the productive centers of India and the Gulf region, these merchants achieved dominance in Kuwait by severing the dynamic link between Kuwaiti development and regional development, and fostering in its place a link with the British system of production.

Through the secret agreement with the usurping

Amir in 1899, Kuwait became a British protectorate, a relationship that lasted until 1961 when Kuwait achieved formal independence and provided the basis for the perpetuation of this class against internal and external threats. Within the framework of this agreement, the relations of production within Kuwait were transformed from a tribally mediated form of community consensus to an externally mediated form of autocracy. This transformation of the nature and basis of class power in Kuwait facilitated the integration of Kuwait into the British division of labour. This integration was a specific part of the integration of the entire Gulf region into the British colonial empire in the Gulf--a process based upon breaking the emerging dynamic link between productive centers and markets in the region and subverting the development of an autonomous capitalist class.

Through the dependence of the local commercial class upon British protection for its perpetuation and upon the importation of British transported commodities for the local and desert hinterland subsistence markets, the surplus realized from the pearl industries was expropriated out of the region. This surplus had provided the basis for the development of Kuwait's merchant fleet in the eighteenth century. With the merchant role marginalized by British domination of Gulf commerce, the dynamic link to productive centers in the region cut off by the political link with

Britain, and the surplus realized from pearling (Kuwait's only form of large-scale commodity production) drained by commerce with Britain, the development of productive forces in Kuwait became specifically limited to intensification of pearl exploitation.

The examination of the political economy of the pearling industry revealed this enterprise to be essentially capitalist in character--that is, commodity production, with the rate of accumulation based upon the rate of exploitation of labour power. Accumulation, however, did not foster expanded capitalist production--the deepening of the capitalist infrastructure. Rather, it fostered an expanded rate of expropriation through British commerce. Kuwait's strategic location vis-a-vis Gulf commerce in general and Basra commerce in particular had been at the very basis of British sponsorship of the ascendance to power and perpetuation of the local commercial class. The attempt by the local commercial class during the First World War to expand commerce autonomously--that is, outside the framework of British expropriation--was suppressed by the British blockade of Kuwait. And during the inter-war period, the attempt of the dominant local commercial class to open commerce with Saudi Arabia was responded to by the tightening of British political control over Kuwait.

The major stimuli to the attempt at autonomous development was the resurgence of Kuwaiti mercantilism during the First World War when Britain's commercial fleet was occupied in the war effort, and the decline of the pearling industry in the inter-war period. The first contributed to the revitalization of the dynamic link between Kuwait and regional development and facilitated accumulation without expropriation. The availability of investment capital, and the regional opportunities for investment and market expansion promoted the impetus toward autonomous development within the wider regional framework. Furthermore, the second revealed the economic fragility of narrow specialization, contributing to the outward orientation and the identification with Arab nationalism. By the end of the inter-war period, the drive toward autonomous development took the form of a political movement that directly challenged Sabah autocracy and indirectly challenged British domination. This movement was suppressed with force, like similar movements throughout the Arab world during the period, closing the historical possibility of autonomous capitalist development in the Arab world in general and Kuwait in particular.

It is the argument here, then, that it was the forces of autonomous capitalist development that British imperialism confronted and ultimately vanquished during the inter-war period in the Arab world in general and Kuwait in particular. In Kuwait, autonomous capitalist class interests found their ideological expression in Arab nationalism. The confrontation between the interests of autonomous capitalism and British imperialism in Kuwait ended the historical role of an autonomous capitalist class in Kuwait. Thereafter, the emergence of oil wealth resulting from the integration of Kuwait into the world capitalist division of labour as a major oil-producer transformed the basis of power and the relationship between central capitalism and peripheral capitalism in Kuwait. Accumulation as a motive force for autonomous capitalist development was dissipated in the unprecedented levels achieved through oil exploitation.

Dependency in the Post-Oil Era

In the post-oil era, the capitalist class was coopted into the ruling class through an expanding government apparatus and participation in oil revenue allocation. The nationalist effort became absorbed in maximizing rates of return to the government from oil exploitation, not in changing the productive substructure or political superstructure--that is, not in changing the structure of dependency. This struggle was spearheaded by the opposition in the National Assembly who found their ideological expression in the anti-imperialist struggle of Arab nationalism. The focus on the oil company as a nationalist rallying point served the interests of the dominant class in terms of maximizing rates of return to the government from oil exploitation and diverting attention from issues of class structure. Once the struggle with the oil company was over, ending in full sovereignty of the government over oil exploitation, however, the usefulness of the opposition had ended. Furthermore, by this time Arab nationalist ideology had articulated the linkage between imperialist exploitation and class domination. With the oil company no longer as a scapegoat, the opposition in the National Assembly began focussing on class issues. The government responded by suspending the democratic facade and oppressing opposition elements where it could not coopt them.

The point to be made here is that although the level of accumulation in Kuwait increased rapidly in the post-oil era, the essential structure of dependency--specialized primary production for the world capitalist market, accumulation by a class who controls the means of production for expropriation to the centers of world capitalism--remains fundamentally unaltered in terms of the functional division of labour between central capitalism and peripheral capitalism established in the historical era of imperialism. Dependency, in other words, is specified by narrow specialization in the world division of labour and expropriation of capital to the world centers of capitalism. Under the impact of capital surplus, the mechanisms of expropriation in Kuwait have taken new forms: expansion of the consumer market through welfare state programs, foreign inevestment and surplus reserves.

In these terms, narrow specialization of productivity and unequal development of productive forces are indicators of underdevelopment. Although the level of productivity may be high in the productive sector, specialization in the world capitalist division of labour specifically limits increasing productivity across economic sectors and diversification of productive labour. The effective result is the marginalization of productive labour rather than its continuing exploitation in a deepening capitalist infrastructure.

In Kuwait, this limitation on the level of development of productive forces was examined in terms of economic transformation. While substantial development in the building of utilities, transportation and communications infrastructures has been achieved, these have served to increase integration into the world capitalist division of labour as a crude oil exporter and to increase dependence upon oil exportation as the motive force of the economic infrastructure. Furthermore, the physical modernization of Kuwait, the dependence of utilities, transportation and communications infrastructures upon technologies produced in the central capitalist nations and the increase in the standard of living of the population have all served to increase the level of expropriation under the impact of increasing capital surplus. The result of development policies, in other words, has been to increase dependence of the economy on the oil sector in correspondence with the growth in the level of surplus. Hence, by 1975/76, the perpetuation of Kuwait's economic infrastructure was more dependent upon its continuing integration into the world capitalist division of labour as a major crude oil exporter than it was in 1967/68.

This limitation on the level of development of productive forces is a function of the relations of production in the world capitalist system. These relations are specified by the level of integration of the peripheral capitalist class into the central capitalist productive substructure. The level of integration, correlatively, is determined by the level of expropriation. Primitive accumulation in Kuwait has taken the form of increasing the rates of return to the government from oil exploitation. Integration has taken the form of increasing the rates of expropriation to the centers of world capitalism to invest in the level of productivity of that system.

Because of its stark physical environment and small population base, development of productive forces in Kuwait could only make sense in a regional context. Its rapid development throughout the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries resulted from the development of its role--productively and politically--in an emerging exchange pattern among productive centers in the region. It was the new structure of the relations of production forged by British penetration of the region that inhibited the development of productive forces, specifically limiting development beyond the bounds of the political divisions established by imperialist powers, and initiating the historical process of the underdevelopment of not only Kuwait but the entire region. In the post-oil era, the role of capital surplus has served to further the integration of the dominant class into the world capitalist structure and has served to strengthen the structure of political divisions that inhibit a new integration of labour. The entire economic infrastructure of Kuwait has developed around activities that produce no value but consume the surplus in such a way as to sustain and enhance expropriation. The effective result is that productive labour in Kuwait is progressively marginalized by imported technologies that service high productivity in the specialized sector and imported consumer commodities that obviate the economy of development outside this sector.

This process of marginalization was examined in terms of the transformation of labour in the post-oil era. The concentration of labour in tertiary sector activities was related to the class dynamics of peripheral capitalism in terms of its relations to expropriation. The distribution of labour in Kuwait reflects the transformation of the economic infrastructure from production of surplus value to consumption of surplus products.

However, the objective link between peripheral capitalism and central capitalism is the rate of expropriation of surplus. In Kuwait, the increasing level of surplus generation from oil exploitation has resulted in the continuous expansion of the mechanisms of expropriation. The institutionalization of these mechanisms has generated increasing demands for immigrant labour to provide the skills and toil required by modern capitalist technologies and their associated forms of bureaucratic organization.

To control the impact of an expatriate population that constitutes over half the population and over three-quarters of the labour force, the government has specifically denied the immigrant population citizenship rights and employment security and has institutionalized status distinctions between Kuwaitis and non-Kuwaitis. These status distinctions were examined in terms of income stratification and the policies of human resource development. These policies were identified in terms of their social control functions. Under the impact of tremendous increases in capital surplus resulting from acquisition of sovereignty over oil exploitation, the imperatives of increasing rates of expropriation generate policies that require a continuous increase in the rate of expansion of the non-Kuwaiti population. To preserve class power in a situation where class legitimacy is based upon an ever diminishing proportion of the population, the social control function has assumed an increasingly prominent role in government policies. These policies, however, serve to further alienate the non-Kuwaiti population from the relations of production of contemporary Kuwait.

In Kuwait, then, there is a fully developed contradiction between the relations of production and the forces of production. Only the contemporary capital surplus situation keeps the contradiction from exploding, but only by fostering social policies that are an incipient negation of Kuwait's dependent capitalist system.

Dependency Theory in Retrospect

In the introductory chapter of this thesis, a number of inter-related conceptual issues regarding dependency theory were raised. These included:

1) Whether dependent societies constitute a homogeneous category in terms of the concept of mode of production.
2) Does peripheral capitalism operate by a different dynamic than capitalism in the developed industrial nations.
3) Is there an objective link between peripheral capitalism and central capitalism that defines the structural dynamics of dependency.

This case study of Kuwait suggests that contemporary Kuwait is not a mode of production distinctive from the capitalist mode. Rather, it forms an integral unit of that mode. Contemporary world capitalism constitutes an historically developed international mode of production, not a national mode, and the capitalist class has evolved through historical development into a world class, not a national class. In examining the historical development of class in Kuwait, dependency theory provided the essential categories for analyzing how Kuwait was integrated into the emerging supra-national capitalist mode of production. The dialectic of imperialism and the development of underdevelopment provided the framework for this analysis. Within this framework, the transformation of the basis of class power from dependence upon world capitalist relations of production (mediated through British imperial power in the Gulf) to dependence upon external forces of production (mediated through the oil company monopoly) can be identified as the point of integration of the dominant class in Kuwait into the world capitalist class.

This identification of a transformation in the basis of class power suggests that a distinction between dependent capitalism as a class dependent upon external force for its perpetuation and peripheral capitalism as a class dependent upon external economic factors for its perpetuation may be useful in dependency theory in attempting to differentiate between class dynamics operating in Third World nations. The case study of Kuwait suggests that in dependent capitalism, the integration of the dominant class into the world capitalist structure is incomplete, and the articulation of social forces within the nation in terms of the capitalist dialectic is fragmentary. In peripheral capitalism, on the other hand, the integration into the world capitalist class is complete, the dominant class is the capitalist class, and the articulation of social forces within the nation is in the framework of the capitalist dialectic.

In Kuwait, the objective link between peripheral capitalism and central capitalism was identified in terms of the rate of expropriation of surplus from capitalist exploitation. In terms of a supra-national capitalist class, peripheral capitalism in Kuwait is peripheral to the level of development of productive forces there, but central to the level of development of productive forces in the world capitalist system. The integrating mechanism of peripheral capitalists into the superstructure of world capitalism is the level of expropriation of surplus. In terms of this, the question of autonomous capitalist development is obviated. The economics of capitalist development simply render integration into the most developed sectors of the capitalist structure more profitable in the short-run and in the long-run in terms of checking the tendency for the rate of profit to fall. However, this does not obviate capitalist development of productive forces, but only insofar as such development facilitates expanded expropriation.

The contemporary structure of Kuwait is a particular case of dependency--a case where the producing nations have achieved a monopoly over a resource that is vital to the forces of production of central capitalism. In this case, capital surplus rather than capital shortage is the effective result. Dependency in Kuwait is specified by its narrow specialized role in the world division of labour as an oil exporter, and its reciprocal role as an expropriator of capital to the industrial world. The relations of production in this dependent mode are specified by the integration of financial and commercial capital into the world capitalist system.

The nature of the dependency relationship is evident in the subordination of development to the forces of production of central capitalism. The structure of development in Kuwait insures the recirculation of capital accumulated through oil exploitation back into the central capitalist system. Thus, in spite of the benefits of capital surplus, Kuwait reflects the same syndromes of underdevelopment present in other dependent nations that are generally attributed to capital shortage: the destruction of the traditional economic infrastructure to accommodate a single resource export economy, dependence of the productive sector upon the importation of capitalist technologies; destruction of internal markets (in Kuwait's case, regional exchange patterns) by the importation of consumer goods from the world centers of capitalism; high levels of technological development and low levels of employment in the productive economic sector; and the rapid growth of the tertiary sector. The forms of development that have occurred in terms of productive forces are determined by the imperative of peripheral capitalism to expand expropriation.

Hence, in Kuwait's capital surplus situation, the expansion of expropriation and not the production of value is the imperative of development. This has resulted in the generation of development policies that conceive of human development in terms of consumerism, and social development in terms of gross consumption indices. The comprehensive welfare program is the principal mechanism of this policy. It disguises unemployment and exploitation resulting from the debilitation of the forces of production for the benefit of a class integrating itself via expropriation into the central capitalist system.

In the limitations placed upon the level of development of productive forces that Kuwait's dependency relationship generates, the dialectic of social class in Kuwait is apparent. As in developed capitalist nations, the relationship between capital and labour is still specified by the objective link between the level of development of productive forces and the rate of exploitation of labour. However, in the case of peripheral capitalism, exploitation takes the form of the deepening of the structure of expropriation. The development of productive forces is specifically limited by the dynamic of this imperative. The result is the marginalization of productive labour rather than its continuing exploitation in a deepening capitalist productive infrastructure. This is the dialectic of social class in the capital surplus dependent society. It remains an empirical question whether it is the dialectic of social class in other dependent nations of the Third World.

Brought down to the level of analysis of social class, dependency theory provided a powerful analytic tool. The analysis identified the relationship between divergent characteristics of change and continuity in Kuwait. Furthermore, by applying dependency theory to a deviant case--a case of capital surplus--the class dynamics of dependency were revealed and the controversy over capital shortage as a causative factor of underdevelopment resolved.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Abu Hakima, Ahmad
1965 History of Eastern Arabia - 1750-1800: The Rise and Development of Bahrain and Kuwait. Beirut: Khayats.

Abu Hakima, Ahmad (ed.)
1967, 1970 History of Kuwait. 2 vols. Kuwait: Kuwait Government Press.

Abdul Wahab, Moneim
1959 Petroleum and Economic Development in Kuwait. Los Angeles: University of California. Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation.

Abu-Nab, Ibrahim
1975 "The Lamp is Still Burning in the Gulf." al-Hawadith (Beirut), January 24.

Aitchison, C. U.
1909 Collection of Treaties, Engagements and Sanads Relating to India and Neighbouring Countries. Vol. 12. Calcutta: np.

al-Adsani, Khalid Suleiman
1947 Nisf 'Am lil Hukm al-Niyabi fi al-Kuwayt (Half a Year of Parliamentary Rule in Kuwait). n.p.

al-'Aqqad, Salah
1972 Ma'alim al-Taghayur fi Duwal al-Khalij al-'Arabi (Features of Change in the Arab Gulf States). Cairo: Ma'had al-Buhuth wa al-Dirasat al'-Arabiyah.

Albaharna, Husain M.
1974 The Arabian Gulf States: Their Legal and Political Status and Their International Problems. 2nd ed.; Beirut: Librairie Du Liban.

al-Bashir, Ahmad
1966 Maqalat 'an al-Kuwayt (Essays on Kuwait). Maktabat al-Amal al-Jabal Press.

Al-Ebraheem, Hasan Ali
1971 Factors Contributing to the Emergence of the State of Kuwait. Bloomington: University of Indiana. Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation.

al-Farhan, Rashid Abdullah
1960 Muktaser Tarikh al-Kuwayt (Short History of Kuwait). Cairo: Dar al-'Urubal.

al-Farra, Muhammed Ali
n.d. al-Tanmujah al-Iqtisadiyah fi Dawlat al-Kuwayt (Economic Development and the State of Kuwait). Kuwait: Jami'at al-Kuwayt.

al-Hamad, A.
1974 Some Aspects of the Oil Controversy: An Arab Interpretation. Kuwait: Kuwait Fund for Arab Economic Development.

al-Hatam, 'Abdullah Khalid
n.d. Min Huna Bada'at al-Kuwayt (From Here Kuwait Started). Damascus: al-Matba'ah al-'Umumiyah.

al-Hawadith (Beirut), January 31, 1975.

al-Jasim, Najat 'Abdul Qadir
1973 al-Tatawur al-Siyasi wa- al-Iqtisadi lil Kuwayt bayn al-Harbayn, 1914-1939 (The Political and Economic Development of Kuwait between Two World Wars, 1914-1939). Cairo: al-Matba'ah al-Fanniyah al-Haditha.

al-Kazemi, Jeisal A.
1973 The Enterpreneurial Factor in Economic Development: Kuwait. Boulder: University of Colorado. Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation.

al-Khatrash, Futuh 'Abd al-Muhsin
1974 Tarikh al-'ilaqat al-Siyasiyah al-Baritaniyah al-Kuwaytiyah (History of Anglo-Kuwaiti Relations, 1890-1921). Kuwait: Dar Dhat al-Salasil.

al-Khususi, Badr al-Din Abbas
1972 Dirasat fi Tarikh al-Kuwayt al-Ijtima'i wa- al-Iqtisadi: 1913-1961 (Studies in the Social and Economic History of Kuwait: 1913-1961). Kuwait: Sharikat al-Matbu'at lil Tawzi' wa al-Nishr.

Al-Marayati, Abid A. (ed.)
1968 Middle Eastern Constitutions and Electoral Laws. New York: Praeger.

al-Mughni, 'Adil Muhammad al-'Abd
1977 al-Iqtisad al-Kuwayti al-Qadim (Traditional Kuwaiti Economy). Kuwait: n.p.

al-Nahar (Beirut), February 12, 1969.

al-Najjar, Mustapha 'Abd al-Qadir
1975 al-Tarikh al-Siyasi li Ilaqat al-Iraq al-Dawliyah bi al-Khalij al-Arabi (The Political History of Iraqi International Relations with the States of the Arab Gulf). Basra: Basra University Press.

al-Naqeeb, Khaldoun H.
1976 Changing Patterns of Social Stratification in the Middle East: Kuwait (1950-1970) as a Case Study. Austin: The University of Texas at Austin. Unpublished Ph.D. Dissertation.

al-Qatami, 'Isa
1976 Dalil al-Muhtar fi 'ilm al-Bihar (The Guide for the Confused on the Science of Navigation). 4th ed.; Kuwait: Government of Kuwait Press.

al-Qina'ie, Yusuf Bin Isa
1968 Safahat min Tarikh al-Kuwayt (Pages from the History of Kuwait). 4th ed.; Kuwait: Government Printing House.

al-Ra'i Al-Amm (Kuwait), February 2, 1975.

al-Rawi, Abdul Jabbar
1972 Al Badiyah (The Desert). 3rd ed.; Baghdad: n.p.

al-Rumaihi, Mohammed Ghanim
1975 al-Bitrol wa- al-Taghayur al-Ijtima'i fi al-Khalij al-Arabi (Oil and Social Change in the Arab Gulf). Kuwait: Mu'ussasat al-Wihdah lil wa- al-Tawzi.

al-Rumaihi, Mohammad Ghanim
1977 Mu'awiqat al-Tanniyah al-Ijtima'iyah wa- al-Iqtisadiyah, fi Mujtama'at al-Khalij al-Arabi al-Mu'asirah (Obstacles to Social and Economic Development in the Contemporary Arab Gulf Societies). Kuwaiti Kadhimah Co.

al-Rushaid, 'Abd al-'Aziz
n.d. Tarikh al-Kuwayt (The History of Kuwait). Beirut: Dar Mahaahat al-Hayat.

al-Sabah, Yousif S. al-Fadel
1970 Economic Transformation of Kuwait: A Study of Dualistic Economy with Capital Surplus. Boston: The Fletcher School of Law and Diplomacy, Taft University. Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation.

al-Salih, Mariam 'Abdullah
1975 Safahat min al-Tatwar al-Tarikhi Lita'lim al-Fatat fi al-Kuwayt (The Historical Development of Education of Girls in Kuwait). Kuwait: Government Press.

al-Shamlan, Sayf Marzouk
1959 Min Tarikh al-Kuwayt (From the History of Kuwait). Cairo: Matbat Nadhat Misr.

al-Shamlan, Sayf Marzouk
1975 Tarikh al-Ghaus 'ala al-Lu'lu' fi al-Kuwayt wa- al-Khalij al-Arabi (History of Pearling in Kuwait and the Arab Gulf). Kuwait: Government of Kuwait.

al-Tali'ah (Kuwait), 1963-1976.

Amin, Galal A.
1974 The Modernization of Poverty: A Study in the Political Economy of Growth in Nine Arab Countries, 1945-1970. Leiden: E. J. Brill.

Amin, Samir
1974 Accumulation on a World Scale: A Critique of the Theory of Underdevelopment. 2 vols. New York: Monthly Review Press.

Amin, Samir
1976 Unequal Development: An Essay on the Social Formations of Peripheral Capitalism. New York: Monthly Review Press.

Amin, Samir
1977 "Self-Reliance and the New International Economic Order." Monthly Review 29 (July-August).

Amiri Decree No. 15, December 5, 1959.

Anon.
n.d. A View of Kuwait. Washington, D. C.: Embassy of the State of Kuwait.

Anthony, John Duke
1975 Arab States of the Lower Gulf: People, Politics, Petroleum. Washington, D.C.: The Middle East Institute.

Aruri, Naseer H.
1971 "Politics in Kuwait." In Jacob M. Landau (ed.), Man, State and Society in the Contemporary Middle East. New York: Praeger.

Baran, Paul
1957 The Political Economy of Growth. New York: Monthly Review Press.

Baster, Nancy (ed.)
1972 Measuring Development: The Role and Adequacy of Development Indicators. London: Frank Cass.

Bernstein, H. (ed.)
1973 Underdevelopment and Development. Harmondsworth: Penguin.

Bidwell, Robin (ed.)
1971 The Affairs of Kuwait, 1896-1905. 2 vols. London: Frank Cass and Co.

Booth, David
1975 "Andre Gunder Frank: An Introduction and Appreciation." In Ivar Oxaal, Tony Barnett and David Booth (eds.). Beyond the Sociology of Development: Economy and Society in Latin America and Africa. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.

Bowen, Richard Le Baron
1951 "Pearl Fisheries of the Persian Gulf." The Middle East Journal, Vol. 5, No. 2 (Spring).

Brown, Michael Barratt
1974 The Economics of Imperialism. Harmondsworth: Penguin.

Bukharin, N.
1972 Imperialism and World Economy. London: The Merlin Press.

Burckhardt, J. L.
1831 Notes on the Bedouins and Wahabys. London: Colburn and Bentley.

Busch, Briton C.
1967 Britain and the Persian Gulf, 1894-1914. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Cardoso, Fernando Henrique
1972 "Dependency and Development in Latin America." New Left Review 74 (July-August).

Case, Paul Edward
1952 "Boom Time in Kuwait." The National Geographic Magazine. Vol. Cll, No.6 (December).

Central Bank of Kuwait
1975 Economic Report for 1974. Kuwait: Central Bank of Kuwait.

Central Bank of Kuwait
1976 Economic Report for 1975. Kuwait: Central Bank of Kuwait.

Central Bank of Kuwait
1977 Economic Report for 1976. Kuwait: Central Bank of Kuwait.

Central Bank of Kuwait
1978 Economic Report for 1977. Kuwait: Central Bank of Kuwait.

Central Statistical Office
1975 Annual Statistical Abstract, 1975. Kuwait: Planning Board.

Central Statistical Office
1976 Annual Statistical Abstract, 1976. Kuwait: Ministry of Planning.

Central Statistical Office
1977 Annual Statistical Abstract, 1977. Kuwait: Ministry of Planning.

Central Statistical Office
1975 Classification of Occupations. Kuwait: Planning Board.

Central Statistical Office
1968 Statistical Abstract, 1968. Kuwait: Planning Board.

Central Statistical Office
1972 Statistical Abstract, 1972. Kuwait: Planning Board.

Central Statistical Office
1973 Statistical Abstract, 1973. Kuwait: Planning Board.

Central Statistical Office
1974 Statistical Yearbook of Kuwait. Kuwait: Planning Board.

Chisholm, A.H.T.
1975 The First Kuwait Oil Concession: A Record of the Negotiations for the 1934 Agreement. London: Frank Cass, 1975.

Cockcroft, James D., Andre Gunder Frank and Dale L. Johnson
1972 Dependence and Underdevelopment: Latin America's Political Economy. Garden City: Anchor Books.

Cole, Donald Powell
1975 Nomads of the Nomads: The Al Murrah Bedouin of the Empty Quarter. Chicago: Aldine Publishing Co.

Council of Planning
1970 al-Hasr al'-Am lil Mu'ssasat Lisanat 1970 (General Account for Institutions, 1970). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1973 al-Hasr al-'Am lil Munsha'at lisanat 1973 (General Accounts for Industrial Organizations, 1973). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1976 al-Ihsa'at al-Zira'iyah 1974/1975 (Agricultural Statistics 1974/75). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1974 al-Nashrah al-Sanawiyah lil Ihsa'at al-Haiawiyah (Annual Statistics of Birth and Death). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1976 al-Ti'dad al-'Am lil Sukkan, 1975. (The General Census, 1975). Two Volumes. Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1974 Ihsa' al-'Amilin bi al-Hukumah 1972. (Statistics of Government Workers for February 1972). Kuwait: Government Press, Vols. 1 - 3.

Council of Planning
1975 Ihsa'at al-Khadmat al-'Ammah (Statistics of Public Services). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1976 Ihsa'at al-Khadamat al'-Ammah (Statistics of Public Services). Kuwait: Ministry of Planning.

Council of Planning
1976 Mashru' Khitat al-Tanmiyah al-Khamsiyah, 1976/77-1980/81 (Proposal of the Five Year Plan, 1976/77-1980/81. Kuwait: Secret Document, 1976.

Council of Planning
1966 Nata'ij Ti'dad Sukkan Dawlat al-Kuwayt li 'Am 1965 (Results of the 1965 Census). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1975 Nata'ij Ihsa' al-Tawzif wa al-Ijur wa Sa'at al-Amal, February 1974 (Statistical Analysis of Employment, Salaries and Working Hours). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1973 Taqdir al-Ihtiyajat min al-Quwa al-'Amilah bi al-Muasasat Ghayr al-Hukumiyah (Estimate of Manpower Needs in the non-Governmental Institutions for the Years 1971/72 - 1975/1976). Kuwait: Government Press.

Council of Planning
1975 Wathiqat Wadi' al-Mar'ah fi al-Kuwayt, 1975 (Document on the Position of Women in Kuwait). Kuwait: Government Press.

Curzon, George N.
1966 Persia and the Persian Question. 2 vols. New York: Barnes and Noble.

Decree Concerning the Planning Board, December 1970.

de Kadt, Emanuel and Gavin Williams (eds.)
1974 Sociology and Development. London: Tavistock Publications.

Demir, Soliman
1976 The Kuwait Fund and the Political Economy of Arab Regional Development. New York: Praeger.

Department of Social Affairs
1958 Ti'dad Sukkan al-Kuwayt Lisanat 1957 (Census of the Kuwaiti Population, 1957). Kuwait: Government Press.

Development of Education in Kuwait
1975 Kuwait: Ministry of Guidance and Information.

Dickson, H.R.P.
1938 "An Account of the Political Situation in Kuwait, 1938.) Dickson's Private Papers, St. Antony's College, Oxford.

Dickson, H.R.P.
1939 "Notes on the Shabiba Movement in Iraq: Its Aims and Methods." Dickson's Private Papers. St. Antony's College, Oxford.

Dickson, H.R.P.
1949 The Arab of the Desert. London: George Allen & Unwin, Ltd.

Dickson, H.R.P.
1956 Kuwait and Her Neighbours. London: George Allen and Unwin, Ltd.

Dobson, Meric
1963 "Labour in Kuwait." Middle East Forum. (December).

Dos Santos, T.
1973 "The Crisis of Dependency Theory and the Problem of Dependence in Latin America." Pp.57-80 in H. Bernstein (ed.), Underdevelopment and Development. Harmondsworth: Penguin.

Doughty, C. M.
1888 Travels in Arabia Deserta. London: Jonathan Cape Ltd.

Economic Commission on Latin America
1969 Development Problems in Latin America. Austin: University of Texas Press.

El Mallakh, Ragaei
1968 Economic Development and Regional Cooperation: Kuwait. Chicago University of Chicago Press.

El Mallakh, R., M. Kadhim and B. Poulson
1977 Capital Investment in the Middle East: The Use of Surplus Funds for Regional Development. New York: Praeger.

Emmanuel, E.
1972 Unequal Exchange. London: New Left Books.

Financial Times (London), February 27, 1978.

Foreign Office
1933 "Relations Between His Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom and the Sheikh of Koweit." With Appendices. IOR L/P&S/12/3732.

Foster-Carter, Aidan
1974 "Neo-Marxist Approaches to Development and Underdevelopment." In Emanuel de Kadt and Gavin Williams (eds.), Sociology and Development. London: Tavistock Publications.

Frank, Andre Gunder
1967 Capitalism and Underdevelopment in Latin America: Historical Studies of Chile and Brazil. New York: Monthly Review Press.

Frank, Andre Gunder
1972 "The Development of Underdevelopment." In James D. Cockcroft, Andre Gunder Frank and Dale L. Johnson (eds.). Dependence and Underdevelopment: Latin America's Political Economy. Garden City: Anchor Books.

Freeth, Zahra and Victor Winstone
1972 Kuwait: Prospect and Reality. London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd.

Halliday, Fred
1974 Arabia Without Sultans. Harmondsworth: Penguin.

Hill, Allan G.
1975 "The Demography of the Kuwaiti Population of Kuwait," Demography 12, No. 3.

Hitti, Philip K.
1964 History of the Arabs. 8th ed.; London: Macmillan & Co. Ltd.

Holdich, T. Hungerford
1901 The Indian Borderland. London: Methuen.

Hurewitz, J. C. (Comp, Trans., Ed.)
1975 The Middle East and North Africa in World Politics: A Documentary Record. Vol. 1. New Haven: Yale University Press.

Husayn, 'abd al-'Aziz
1960 al-Mujtama' al-'Arabi bil Kuwait (Arab Society in Kuwait). Cairo: Institute for Higher Arab Studies.

Hussain, Abdul Aziz
1960 Muhdharat fi al-Mujtama al-Arabi fi al-Kuwait (Lectures on the Arab Society of Kuwait). Cairo: Institute for Higher Arab Studies.

Ireland, Philip
1938 Iraq: A Study in Political Development. New York: The Macmillan Co.

'Isa, Ruziq
1912 "Maghasat al-Lu'lu" (The Location of Pearls). Lughat al-Arab, No. 12, (May).

The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development
1965 The Economic Development of Kuwait. Baltimore: The John Hopkins Press.

Ismael, Tareq, Y.
1974 The Middle East in World Politics: A Study in Contemporary International Relations. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press.

Ismael, Tareq, Y.
1976 The Arab Left. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press.

Kelly, J. B.
1968 Britain and the Persian Gulf, 1795-1880. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Khaz'al, Husayn Khalaf al-Shaykh
1962-1970 Tarikh al-Kuwayt al-Siyasi (The Political History of Kuwait). 5 vols. Beirut: Matabu'Dar al-Kutub.

Kumar, Ravinder
1965 India and the Persian Gulf Region, 1858-1907: A Study in British Imperial Policy. New York: Asia Publishing House.

"Kuwait"
1978 Financial Times Survey, London: February 27.

Kuwait Chamber of Commerce and Industry
1965 Dalil al-Kuwayt (Guide to Kuwait). Kuwait: Chamber of Commerce and Industry.

Kuwait Fund for Arab Economic Development
Annual Report, 1974-1975. Kuwait: Press Advertising Agency.

Kuwait - Monthly Bulletin
1973 New York: Permanent Mission of the State of Kuwait to the United Nations. Vol. X, No. 2 (September).

Kuwait - Monthly Bulletin
1973 New York: Permanent Mission of the State of Kuwait to the United Nations. Vol. X, No. 5 (December).

Kuwait - Monthly Bulletin
1974 New York: Permanent Mission of the State of Kuwait to the United Nations. Vol. XI, No. 4 (November).

Kuwait Population Census, 1957.
1958 Kuwait: Office of Social Affairs.

Kuwait Today: A Welfare State
n.d. Kuwait: Ministry of Guidance and Information.

Lenczowski, George
1960 Oil and State in the Middle East. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.

Lenin, V. I.
n.d. Imperialism: The Highest Stage of Capitalism. Moscow: Foreign Language Publishing House.

Leys, Colin
1975 Underdevelopment in Kenya: The Political Economy of Neo-Colonialism, 1964-1971. London: Heinemann.

Liebesny, Herbert F.
1947 "International Relations of Arabia: The Dependent Areas." The Middle East Journal, Vol. 1, No. 2 (April).

Loghat el-Arab (Baghdad), No. 7 (December 1913).

Longrigg, Stephen Hemsley
1925 Four Centuries of Modern Iraq. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Longrigg, Stephen H.
1972 Oil in the Middle East: Its Discovery and Development. 3rd ed.; London; Oxford University Press, 1972.

Lorimer, J. F.
1970 Gazeteer of the Persian Gulf, Oman and Central Arabia. 2 vols. Shannon: Irish University Press.

Magdoff, Harry
1972 "Imperialism: A Historical Survey." Monthly Review 24, No. 1 (May).

Mahjub, Mohammed
n.d. al-Hijrah wa- al-Taghayyur al-Bina'i fi al-Mujtama' al-Kuwayti (Migration and Structural Change in Kuwaiti Society). Kuwait Wakalat al-Mutboa'at.

Mahjub, Mohammed
1974 Muqadimmah li'dirasat al-Mujtama'at al-Badawiyah (Introduction of Bedouin Societies). Kuwait Wakalat al-Mutboa'at.

Mahmoud, Husayn Sulaiman
1968 al-Kuwayti Madhiha wa Hadhruha (Kuwait: Its Past and Present). Baghdad: al-Ahliyah Bookshop.

Manesty, Samuel and Harford Jones
1790 "Report on the Commerce of Arabia and Persia." In Ahmad Abu Hakima (ed.). History of Kuwait. 2 vols. Kuwait: Kuwait Government Press.

Marx, Karl
1965 Capital: A Critical Analysis of Capitalist Production. 3 vols. Moscow: Progress Publishers.

Marx, Karl and Frederick Engels
1969 Selected Works. 3 vols. Moscow: Progress Publishers.

Meillassoux, C.
1972 "From Reproduction to Production." Economy and Society 1, No. 1.

Meszaros, I.
1970 Marx's Theory of Alienation. London: The Merlin Press.

Middle East Annual Review, 1977
1978 Essex: The Middle East Economic Review.

Middle East Economic Digest, April 9, 1976 (Beirut).

Middle East Economic Survey
1975 Vol. XVIII, No. 4 (November 15).

Middle East Economic Survey
1976 Vol. XIX, No. 17 (February 13).

Middle East Economic Survey
1976 Vol. XIX, No. 30 (May 17).

Miles, S. B.
1919 The Countries and Tribes of the Persian Gulf. London: Frank Cass & Co.

Mughraby, Muhammad A.
1972 Permanent Sovereignty Over Oil Resources, A Study of Middle East Oil Concessions and Legal Concessions. Beirut: Middle East Research and Publishing Center.

Nawfal, Sayyid
1969 al-Khalij al-'Arabi aw al-Hudud al-Sharqiyah lil Watan al-'Arabi (The Arab Gulf or the Western Frontiers of the Arab Nation). Beirut: Dar al-Tali'ah.

New York Times
April 16, 1973
May 16, 1973
October 16, 1973
October 18, 1973
October 22, 1973
March 14, 1974
November 11, 1974

Obregon, Anibal Quijano
1974 "The Marginal Pole of the Economy and the Marginalized Labour Force." Economy and Society 3, No. 4 (November).

O'Brien, Philip J.
1975 "A Critique of Latin American Theories of Dependency." In Ivar Oxaal, Tony Barnett and David Booth (eds.), Beyond the Sociology of Development: Economy and Society in Latin America and Africa. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.

Odell, P. R.
1975 Oil and World Power: Background to the Oil Crisis. 4th ed.; London: Pelican Books.

Owen, Roger and Bob Sutcliffe (eds.)
1972 Studies in the Theory of Imperialism. London: Longman.

Oxaal, Ivar, Tony Barnett and David Booth (eds.)
1975 Beyond the Sociology of Development: Economy and Society in Latin America and Africa. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul

Palgrave, William Gifford
1865 Narrative of a Year's Journey through Central and Eastern Arabia (1862-63). 2 vols. London: Macmillan and Co.

Planning Board
1968 The First Five Year Development Plan, 1967/68 - 1971/72. Kuwait: al-Rissala Press.

Political Agent, Kuwait
1914 "Kuwait: Properties of Sheikhs of Kuwait and Mohammerah in Mesopotamia, 1913-1914. F.O. File # R/15/1/510.

Political Agent, Kuwait
1938 "Persian Gulf: Kuwait Disturbances, 1938, and Consequent Administrative Changes: Kuwait Council." IOR L/P&S/12/3894A.

Political Agent, Kuwait
1938 Trade Report for Kuwait. F.O. File # L/P&S/12/3743.

Poulantzas, Nicos
1974 "Internationalization of Capitalist Relations and the Nation-State." Economy and Society 3, No. 2 (May).

Qal'achi, Qadri
1975 al-Nizam al-Siyasi wa al-Iqtisadi fi Dawlat al-Kuwayt (The Political and Economic System of Kuwayt). Beirut: Dar al-Katib al-'Arabi.

Qatamish, Ilfat
1975 "Kharitat al-Taghurat al-Ijtimiyah bil Kuwayt fi Rubi' Qarin" (The Kuwaiti Map of Social Change in a Quarter of a Century). al-Qabis (Kuwait), August 18.

Razzak, Fatima Husayn al-Abdul
1974 al-Miyah wa al-Sukun fi al-Kuwayt (Water and Population in Kuwait). Kuwait: n.p.

Rentz, G. S.
1948 'Abd al-Wahab (1703/1792) and the Beginnings of Unitarian Empire in Arabia. Ph.d. Dissertation, History, California University.

Rida, Muhammad Jawad
1975 al-Tarbiyah wa al-Tabaddul al-Ijtima'i fi al-Kuwayt wa al-Khalij al-'Arabi (Education and Social Change in Kuwait and the Arab Gulf). Kuwait: Wakalat al-Matbu'at.

Robertson-Smith, W.
1885 Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia. London: A. & C. Black.

Roxborough, Ian
1976 "Dependency Theory in the Sociology of Development." The West African Journal of Sociology and Political Science 1, No. 2 (January).

Rumaihi, Mohammed
1975 "The Human Capital in the Gulf: A Way for Lasting Development." Unpublished.

Saleh, Zaki
1957 Mesopotamia (Iraq), 1600-1914: A Study in British Foreign Affairs. Baghdad: al-Ma'aref Press.

Sampson, Anthony
1975 The Seven Sisters: The Great Oil Companies and the World They Made. New York: The Viking Press.

Shehab, Fakhry
1964 "Kuwait: A Super-Affluent Society." Foreign Affairs, Vol. 42, No. 3 (April).

Shiber, Saba George
1964 The Kuwait Urbanization. Kuwait: Government Press.

Sinan, Mahmud Bajat
n.d. al-Kuwayt: Zahrat al-Khalij al-Arabi (Kuwait: Blossom of the Arab Gulf). Beirut: Matabi Dar al-Kashshab.

Socknat, James A.
1975 An Inventory and Assessment of Employment-Oriented Human Resources Development Programs in the Gulf Area. Manama, Bahrain: The Ford Foundation. Unpublished.

Stanford Research Institute
1971 Area Handbook for the Peripheral States of the Arabian Peninsula. n.p. The American University.

Stavrianos, L. S.
1965 The Balkans Since 1453. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.

Stephens, Robert
1976 The Arabs' New Frontier. London: Temple Smith.

Sutcliffe, Bob
1972 "Imperialism and Industrialization in the Third World." In Roger Owen and Bob Sutcliffe (eds.), Studies in the Theory of Imperialism. London: Longman.

Tucker, Robert C. (ed.).
1972 The Marx-Engels Reader. New York: W. W. Norton and Co.

Van Pelt, Mary Cubberly
1950 "The Sheikhdom of Kuwait." The Middle East Journal 1, No. 4 (January).

Villiers, Alan
1948 "Some Aspects of the Arab Dhow Trade." The Middle East Journal, Vol. 2, No. 4 (October).

Villiers, Alan
1969 Sons of Sinbad. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons.

Wahbah, Hafidh
1946 Jazirat al-Arab (The Arab Peninsula) Cairo: n.p.

Warden, Francis
1856 "Historical Sketch of the Uttoobee Tribe of Arabs (Bahrein) from the year 1716 to the year 1817." In Ahmad Abu Hakima (ed.). History of Kuwait. 2 vols. Kuwait: Kuwait Government Press, 1970.

d

Warren, Bill
1972 "Imperialism and Capitalist Industrialization." New Left Review, No. 74 (July-August).

Wellsted, J. R.
1838 Travels in Arabia. 2 vols. London: John Murray.

Wilson, Arnold T.
1928 The Persian Gulf: An Historical Sketch from the Earliest Times to the Beginning of the Twentieth Century. London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd.

Winder, R. Bayly
1965 Saudi Arabia in the Nineteenth Century. New York: St. Martin's Press.

APPENDIX 1

APPENDIX 1

THE LAW OF DIVERS*

In the name of God, the merciful
The Law of Divers in Kuwait
Issued in the Year 1359h.-1940.a.d.

We the ruler of Kuwait! Ahmad
Al-Jabqr Al-Sabah

In accordance with the suggestion of the chairman of the consultative committee and because of our wish to reform the country and our subjects, we order the following: This is called the Law of the Divers and is composed of 51 articles.

Article One

It is obligatory for every sea diver to appear before his captain at least half a month prior to the official diving trip to service the ship. This order is effective inside and outside the country except in cases of a legitimate excuse [for absence]. If the diver fails to appear without an excuse, he shall be punished.

---

*Translation based on a comparison of the law in Adil Muhammad al-'Abd al-Mughni, al-Iqtisad al-Kuwayti al-Qadim (The Traditional Kuwaiti Economy), (Kuwait: 1977), pp. 225-234, and Badr al-Din Abbas al-Khususi, Dirasat fi Tarikh al-Kuwayt al-Ijtima'i wa al-Iqtisadi: 1913-1961 (Studies in the Social and Economic History of Kuwait: 1913-1961), (Kuwait, Sharikat al-Matbu'at Lil Tawzi' wa al-Nashr, 1972), pp.429-439.

Article Two

The seamen are obliged to obey the orders of the captain during the season of diving whether they are on sea or on land. They have no right to disobey or object to his orders whatever they may be. However, if anything occurs which may disturb the system of diving, the captain then should have the crew or others witness it and take the issue to the ruler.

Article Three

When a seaman receives salaf [an advance] from his captain and is absent without a legitimate excuse, then he is obligated to return the advance. In addition, he will have to pay the penalty decided upon by the Government at the end of the diving season.

Article Four

A seaman signs with a captain for diving and receives the advance. If the ship stops in one of the ports and the seaman stays behind, then his case will be taken to the ruler.

Article Five

When a seaman is a month or more late in appearing for the official trip of the diving season without a legitimate excuse, then the captain has the choice of either levying the official fine (fasal) or reducing the advance by half and allowing the seaman to join the ship. This is only if half of the season has not passed. But if more than half of the season has passed, then the seaman has to pay the approved penalty.

Article Six

If the season is over and the seaman did not appear and did not have a legitimate excuse for his absence, then he has to pay the penalty levied.

Article Seven

If a seaman escapes from diving two times or more and is apprehended, he will not be released without the bond of a guarantor.

Article Eight

For any seaman who does not fulfill the service expected from him on the land or the sea the captain has a choice of either paying him only half of the advance or taking from him half of the advance and releasing him, or accepting from him, a note promising one-third of his share.

Article Nine

If a seaman gets sick, it is the duty of the captain to take care of him as well as circumstances allow. If the seaman could not stay on the ship due to illness, it is the captain's duty to send him home. When the seaman reaches home, he is expected to see a doctor. If God grants him recovery, then he must return to his captain.

Article Ten

If a seaman claims to be sick and is sent home by his captain for treatment and the doctor discovers he is not sick, then he will be punished and must return immediately to his captain.

Article Eleven

The penalty [levied on the seaman] for the diving captain is the same amount decided by the government, for the advance.

Article Twelve

If a captain signs a seaman to duty and the seaman has a penalty levied against him [by a former captain] in an explanatory note and was not able to pay the penalty . . . the former captain can write a note for the penalty and the latter captain has no right to the levied penalty.

Article Thirteen

If a captain was unable to dive and [because of being] late and could not pay the penalty [to the crew], then he must write a note [guaranteeing to the crew] one-third of the share for one full year and the captain [who the crew signs on with] does not get any part of it.

Article Fourteen

If a seaman diver borrowed money [from the captain] after the return, then he is required to take the advance and travel with [the captain] for the dive [the following season] and he has no right to ask his captain for a note that year.

Article Fifteen

All seamen who are diving together: the living pay the debts of the dead, the present of the absent, on the condition that those who participate have reached the age of maturity. The agreement should be written in the presence of all those who are participating and witnesses. No participants should break up until all debts on all of them are paid.

Article Sixteen

The captain has no right to pay money to any of the participants except in the presence of all [members of the Crew] or a legal authorization from those absent. If the captain paid one of them and the rest did not approve it, then it becomes a special [arrangement] with the receiver.

Article Seventeen

If one of those participating in the dive dies and leaves anything besides his house, his [belongings] will be distributed among his debtors in accordance with the amount of debt. As for the house, it will be under the jurisdiction of Articles 18 and 19.

Article Eighteen

If a seaman dies and leaves a house and has no inheritors, this house if it came from the money of the diving captain, and he can prove it, is for the captain. But if it was owned as a result of inheritance or purchased from money not derived from diving, then it will go to all the debtors, each in accordance with his debt.

Article Nineteen

If the seaman dies and has no property except his house and has young children, and it is proven that the house came from the money of diving, the captain has to wait until the children reach the age of maturity. Then he will give them the choice between paying the debt to the captain, or diving [to satisfy] the debt of their father, or selling the house and paying its value to the diving captain. If it is proven that the house came from [money] other than diving money, the descendants will be given the choice at the age of maturity between selling the house and paying its value to all the debtors, or keeping the house and guaranteeing payment of the father's debt.

Article Twenty

It is not allowed for the diving captain to pay seamen joining him on the [system] of one-third share more than the specified government increase. He has no right to delay [payment] of the third. It should be paid at the end of the diving season.

Article Twenty-one

If a captain gave a seaman a new note [promising] one-third of the share and another captain joined him, the first [captain] has no right to regain the seaman until the money of the new captain is depleted, unless the first captain has a good excuse to regain [the seaman].

Article Twenty-two

If a captain was unable [to go] diving after the seaman joined him on the [system] of one-third share, the captain has the right to send the seaman diving with whoever he chooses, or give a note [promising] one-third of the share. The captain that is unable to go diving has no rights [on the seaman] until the money of the seaman's new captain is depleted. The new captain has to pay the unable captain one-third of the seaman('s share).

Article Twenty-three

The seaman who joins [a crew] on the [system] of one-third and a leftover occurred from his earnings, and after paying one-third to the first captain, he has to pay one-fourth of the leftover to the unable captain. But if he [the seaman] was paid five rupees of the advance, all the leftovers are for the seaman.

Article Twenty-four

The [financially] weak captain who enlists seamen on the [system] of one-third and pays them [in advance] from 10 to 15 rupees and if he does not get his money by the end of the earning season, the seamen have no right to ask in the coming year for the advance according to the government regulation. They have to be satisfied with last year's advance or repay the advance they have.

Article Twenty-five

If a seaman was not able to dive with the big ships and was able to ride with the small ones or with the Khamamis[1] on the system of one-third, then one-third goes to his captain if there was one or captains if they were more.

Article Twenty-six

If a seaman accepted a note on the one-third [system] and does not go diving without legitimate reason, then he has to pay the penalty suitable to his circumstances. In the case of disagreement, the ruler will be the final judge.

Article Twenty-seven

If a diver takes to the sea alone [azzal] and had taken an advance, no matter how little it may be, he has no right to the fifth except with the agreement and consent of a captain. If he has not taken an advance, he has the right to half of the fifth. And if the loner is indebted to another captain, the loner will have ten per cent of the leftover and the rest will go to satisfy the loan.

---

[1] Khamamis is

Article Twenty-eight

If a captain rented a ship on the [system] of half of the fifth and took on an azzal [loner] with him, he has one-fourth of the fifth, except if he has a condition [stating] one-half of the fifth; then he has that.

Article Twenty-nine

If a tabab [a child usually between seven to ten years old in training to become a diver] dives rawasi [dives without assistance] and God was generous, his captain will have one-half of the fifth and the share of the cost of food [for the tabab].

If the tabab dives with a rock, hajar [with assistance], his captain will get one-half of the fifth and one share of radhif [children usually not exceeding fourteen years of age in training to become divers] and the cost of food [for the tabab]. And if the tabab dives aydah [with assistance], then he will pay the share of a seit [those who pull the divers up] in addition to half of the fifth and the cost of his food.[1]

---

[1] Rawasi, hajari, aydah are different techniques of diving.

Article Thirty

If a captain took a ship and spent on it what is essential [to its maintenance] and this expenditure was more than the ship's earnings, the addition will stay as a debt on the owner of the ship in the coming season to be paid to the captain. But if the owner sold the ship, then he has to pay the debt from the [sale] price. If the ship sinks, the captain will have nothing. But if it broke and can be repaired, the debt stays as it is.

Article Thirty-one

If a captain rents a ship for a fixed [amount] of money, then everything spent on the ship will be counted toward the rental. And the captain has to itemize the expenses in a detailed bill.

Article Thirty-two

Every seaman who is employed in government [services] or the oil company is obliged to pay to the chief of divers [maamour al-ghawasin] fifteen percent of his monthly salary.

Article Thirty-three

For every seaman who is employed in other than the government or the oil companies, the captain then has the choice between compensation [facil] or the seaman.

Article Thirty-four

[In the case of] every merchant who advances a loan to a diving captain [in anticipation of the] diving harvest and the captain was not able to gain enough to make payment, . . . the merchant has no right to demand payment from property. But he takes all the seamen and the ships. And if this does not satisfy all the loan, he then can take property, with the exception of the captain's private dwelling.

Article Thirty-five

If a diving captain borrowed from somebody and uses his property or his house as security in a legal contract and the captain is unable to pay, then the debtor can sell whatever property was put up as security, and the captain has no right to direct the debtor to the seaman or the ships.

Article Thirty-six

Everyone who gives [lends] the diving captain is obligated to provide all the money [to outfit the ship] and provide food on the sea and land [for the crew] and to pay the captain what he owes on the seamen's account. [The lender is also obliged to pay] the thirds to the crew on [the system of] one third, without interest. The captain is obligated to surrender ~~to~~ the lender all that is purchased and will not hide from him anything. If he hides anything, then he has no right to ask for the remainder of the account and the thirds and a punishment will be inflicted on him.

Article Thirty-seven

Anybody who wants to demand payment of a debt from a captain should do it immediately after Qafal [close of the season]. If a month elapses since Qafal before the debtor requests payment, then he forfeits his right for this year. The debtor has the right to make his demand next year in accordance with this article . . . .

Article Thirty-eight

It is forbidden for the diving captain to make a condition with a tawash [pearl merchant] when selling [in which] some money [is gained] for the captain himself or any of his relatives. [If it] becomes evident that he has taken some [money] this will be taken from him and will be added to the total [income]. It is not allowed for the captain to make an income from pearling [additional] to his share.

Article Thirty-nine

The diving captain is obligated to inform the seamen of the value upon the completion of sale.

Article Forty

Every captain who lends [advances] money to the seaman on Khanchiya or on raddah after the issuing of this law, all that is left by the end of the two seasons will be considered as cancelled.[1]

Article Forty-one

If a seaman owed a captain a remainder of Khanchiya or raddah before the issuing of this law, its settlement is with the ruler. And if a seaman rides with a captain whom he owed previously and a leftover occurs [after taking the shares] then the captain receives payment of his old debt [from the leftover].

---

[1] Khanchiya, is the name of diving before the official season. It occurs in early spring, around April, and is usually done by a few small ships operating close to the coast. Reddah is return to diving after the close of the official season, usually in the fall, around October. Like Khanchiya, it is participated in by a few small boats operating close to the coast. al-Shamlan, History of Pearling, pp.273-274.

Article Forty-two

If a seaman has in his hand a note on the [system] of one-third and a tawashi or Qatta' [merchant] or others took the seaman [in his service] during the diving season, then the one who included the seaman [in his crew] has to pay the levied penalty. And if he included the seaman without a paper, then the blame is on him and he will pay the levied penalty.

Article Forty-three

If a merchant captain took a seaman on a journey going to Zanzibar or Malabar and fifteen days passed from the diving [season] and this seaman does not arrive, then the merchant captain has to pay the levied penalty to the diving captain. The diving captain has the choice between receiving the levied penalty or taking the seaman. If the seaman is late [the same period] for the second trip, the judgement will be the same.

Article Forty-four

It is obligatory for the captain of a merchant ship on his second trip to ask the diving seaman to have in writing permission from his diving captain to join [the merchant crew]. If the merchant captain signs the seaman without the written [permission] and the season of diving begins and the seaman does not arrive, and the [pearling] ship departs, then the merchant captain has to pay to the diving captain one and a half times the amount of compensation decided by the government. The merchant captain will be reprimanded by the ruler. But if the [diving] captain did not go diving, the merchant captain in this case is obligated to pay the penalty which is paid by the other seamen [of the diving crew] who do not go diving.

Article Forty-five

If a seaman arrives in the season of diving and his merchant captain wants to send him to Basra for unloading of cargo, he has no right to do so.

Article Forty-six

If the seaman was delayed fifteen days because of travelling [with a merchant vessel] and his captain did not go diving, then the captain has a choice of either taking the seaman or taking half of the advance paid by the merchant captain.

Article Forty-seven

It is not allowed for the lender to complain about a seaman who has taken the advance from his captain, but he is obligated to take the complaint earlier to the ruler.

Article Forty-eight

If a seaman stayed behind fifteen days and was of the diving seaman who are supposed to join [the crew] after the first [group] his captain has the choice between taking him or taking the compensation on an average basis. This is paid by the merchant captain.

Article Forty-nine

If a seaman signed a note on the one-third [system] and then took a ship [as a captain], one-third of the harvest of Qalatiyah [Sheikh's share] and the fifty or its half, whether the seaman was a seaman or a Captain, will be taken from him.

Article Fifty

It is forbidden for any captain to sign up a seaman [who belongs] to other captains unless the seaman has in his hands a book from the accountant of diving in which what he owes and what is owed to him is recorded. Both the captain and the seaman have to appear before the accountant to change the registration.

Article Fifty-one

The Shura Council executes this order:
issued 22 Rabia al-Thani; the year 1359 hijari,
occurring 29 May 1940.

Signed:

The Ruler of Kuwait Ahmed al-Jabir al-Sabah	The President of the Shura Council, Abdullah at Salim al-Sabah

It was also decided to add to the law of Diving two new Articles.

Article One

If a seaman dies after he leaves to diving, even if it was a short period, a complete share will be allocated as if he was alive to the end of the season.

Article Two:

If a captain was delayed from going to diving and his seamen want to go with the first [group], he either gives them an advance and they will be delayed with him or he gives them an advance and sends them with the advance [group]. If the captain is unable to do so, he will give the seamen a note on the one-third [system].

Taken from the minutes of the Shura Council's meeting of Tuesday, 6 of Jamadi the First, 1359.

APPENDIX 2

SECRET APPENDIX 2

(14377)

RELATIONS BETWEEN HIS MAJESTY'S GOVERNMENT IN THE UNITED KINGDOM AND THE SHEIKH OF KOWEIT*

[E 6077/16/91]

1. Final Record of a Meeting held at the Foreign Office, on October 5, 1933.

THE following were present at the meeting:-

Mr. G. W. Rendel (in the Chair), Foreign Office
Mr. K. R. Johnstone, Foreign Office
Sir A. Ryan, His Majesty's Minister at Jedda
Lieutenant-Colonel T. C. Fowle, Political Resident in the Persian Gulf
Mr. J. G. Laithwaite, India Office

The meeting had before it Sir Andrew Ryan's note of the 16th August, regarding the attitude of King Ibn Saud towards Koweit (see Appendix A).

Mr. Rendel outlined the present political situation of Koweit. The Sheikh was tied to His Majesty's Government by his treaty engagements, but at the same time was being courted both by Ibn Saud and by Iraq. It was clear that the sheikhdom was not in a position which in the ordinary way would enable it to stand alone either as a political or as an economic entity, and that it must therefore depend on some stronger Power. He understood that it was the policy of His Majesty's Government, in view of the strategic importance of Koweit, not to allow it to be absorbed by any foreign Power, but, so far as was possible, to maintain their present treaty relationship with the Sheikh.

---

*India Office Library and Records, L/P+S/12/3732.

Mr. Laithwaite suggested that Koweit was at the present moment of more vital importance to His Majesty's Government than it had been at any time, since it had bulked so prominently as the terminus of the Bagdad Railway before the war. This was the result first of the development of the air route to India and Australia, which had made the Gulf as important imperially from the air standpoint as was the Suez Canal for naval reasons, and secondly, owing to the expiration of the mandatory regime in Iraq and the uncertainty of the future relations of His Majesty's Government with that country. So long as Iraq had been under British control, there had been a natural tendency to give it prior consideration and the less important question of Koweit had been kept comparatively in the background. But now that Iraq had attained full independence, the position was changed and Koweit had once again assumed major importance. Geographically, Koweit occupied a key position at the head of the Persian Gulf, and one from which the Gulf could be controlled. In the event of war we could probably safely assume that Koweit would be on our side and her territory would afford us a base of operations of definite value, to the use of which, on the assumption in question, no objection could be raised on the ground that we were violating her neutrality. Further, with the development of the Arabian coast air route to the East, Koweit was likely to prove more and more vital as a station on that route, especially if our relations with Iraq should at any time become so strained that we were unable to rely on the use of the Iraqi aerodromes for the purposes of that route.

Colonel Fowle suggested that in point of fact it might one day be possible to avoid the use of Iraq altogether, and fly direct from Palestine to Koweit, as the range of the aircraft using the Arabian route increased.

Mr. Rendel concurred with Mr. Laithwaite's estimate of the position as regards Iraq. In view of recent events in Iraq it was possible that our whole relationship with that country might have to be modified, and he considered that both the future of the Anglo-Iraqi Treaty and of the position of the Royal Air Force in Iraq must be regarded as doubtful. On the general point at issue, he observed that one of the main points to be borne in mind was the fact that Koweit was not naturally independent from either the geographical or the economic point of view. It was a port without a hinterland, cut off at present by the Iraqi and Saudi frontiers from the territory which it would naturally feed, and at present denied free communication with the country behind it. Moreover, even its present trade might be jeopardised by the development of the Saudi port at Ras Tanura under the auspices of the American oil concessionaires on the Hasa coast. What was even more important was that its fresh-water supply was not derived from its own territory, but had to be imported from Iraq. It was for consideration, therefore, whether it would, in fact, be practicable for His Majesty's Government to maintain the independence of Koweit as against its neighbours, at any rate on the present basis of a rather loose and ill-defined dependence on His Majesty's Government.

Colonel Fowle concurred generally in Mr. Rendel's description of the economic position of the sheikhdom. He pointed out, however, that Koweit had always been the port of the deserts of northern Arabia, as Bahrein was the port of Central Arabia. In regard to the position of Koweit vis-a-vis of Iraq, he added that beside the influence which Iraq could exert by controlling Koweit's fresh-water supply, it was also powerful enough to bring pressure to bear upon Koweit over, for instance, the question of smuggling.

Mr. Rendel agreed that both Iraq and Saudi Arabia were in a position to exert strong pressure on Koweit. This being so, the rivalry between them over Koweit was likely to increase, unless, of course, Saudi Arabia disintegrated. The present position of Koweit between these two States was weak, and Sir Andrew Ryan's note showed how powerful an attraction Ibn Saud could exert. The question, therefore, was whether His Majesty's Government would not be well advised to develop and tighten up their own relations with Koweit in order to strengthen its position. It had, in fact, been suggested that it might be more advantageous to convert our present treaty relationship into a definite protectorate, on, for instance, the analogy of the Hadramaut, which was now regarded as part of the Aden Protectorate, but where our treaty relationship with the local rulers and obligations to afford them protection had been if anything looser than those we had towards Koweit. Would not a protectorate ensure Koweit more effectively against absorption than the present attempt to maintain the sheikhdom as a kind of political vacuum in the Persian Gulf.

Mr. Laithwaite drew attention to three points:-

(a) At present the obligations of His Majesty's Government to Koweit were represented by their undertaking to grant "good offices" in respect of Koweit under the 1899 agreement, by their promise of 1907 that "the town of Koweit and its boundaries belong to Sheikh Mobarak-us-Suba, Ruler of Koweit, and to his heirs after him," and their undertaking of the 3rd November, 1914, that Koweit, in the event of a victory over the

Turks, would be recognised by us as an independent principality under British protection. They were thus very general in terms, and, in accordance with our normal policy on the Arab littoral, which dated from a period in which it was possible to protect a sea port by action from the sea, but not to afford effective help inland, we had consistently endeavoured to limit our obligations, save as regards "good offices" to Koweit town and the immediately adjoining area. Recent experience had, however, shown that in cases of intervention from outside it was in fact necessary to give the Sheikh, at our discretion, and on our own terms, a measure of active assistance up to the limit of his frontiers and with the development of aircraft the problem of inland defence was now less difficult. This was to some extent a strengthening of his strict treaty position, as also possibly an extension of our strict treaty obligations.

(b) With regard to the suggested establishment of a protectorate, it was necessary to consider what the reactions of the Sheikh would be, and also what effect the proclamation of a protectorate might have on the other Arab rulers of the Gulf. It would in any case be wiser not to make an overt proclamation of this nature, since both in Bahrein and in Qatar and along the Trucial Coast it would probably rouse apprehensions and might even cause the local sheikhs to turn away from His Majesty's Government and consider submitting themselves to Persia or to Ibn Saud.

(c) The basis of His Majesty's Government's present treaty relationship with Koweit was unsatisfactory. In the first place, it did not rest, as was the case with Bahrein, Muscat and the Trucial Sheikhdoms, on a long series of formal treaties with the Sheikh dating back for over a century, or, as in the case of Qatar, on a comprehensive treaty, but was based only on a comparatively brief correspondence exchanged between the sheikhs and His Majesty's Government since 1899 and on the reciprocal engagements, still presumably binding since they had not been abrogated, entered into in connexion with the lease of Bunder Shweikh in 1907; secondly, there were certain gaps, e.g., we had no slavery agreement with Koweit. It might, he suggested, be possible to fill in the gaps left by this correspondence and tighten our control in that way. An example was our recent request to the Sheikh for certain undertakings in regard to air facilities in his sheikhdom, one result of which would be to concentrate effective control of such facilities, whether military or civil, in the hands of His Majesty's Government. Another instance was the recent proposed amendment of the Koweit Order in Council so as to place responsibility for jurisdiction over non-Moslem foreigners in the hands of His Majesty's Government. A gradual tightening of our control of this character, particularly if pursued as a definite policy on all convenient occasions, would, he thought, at once avoid the difficulties involved in establishing a formal protectorate and would make it very much simpler.

Colonel Fowle expressed the view that there did not seem to be any intermediate position possible between a treaty relationship with the Sheikh on the present lines and a full protectorate. The Sheikh would certainly be unwilling to agree to the sheikhdom becoming a formal protectorate, and, prima facie, he (Colonel Fowle) was not much in favour of it. He agreed, however, that it would be advisable, on suitable opportunities, to try to tighten up our control over the Sheikh.

On being questioned whether he did not consider that our restricted position vis-a-vis of the Sheikh in regard to the Koweit oil concession indicated the essential weakness of our treaty position, he replied that our difficulties in that case had been due rather to the special undertakings given to the United States Government in that matter than to any weakness in our normal control over the Sheikh under the treaty engagements. Had we been able, without violating our pledges to the United States Government, to tell the Sheikh that we required him to give the concession to the Anglo-Persian Oil Company he would have done so.

Mr. Rendel drew attention to the fact that in the event of serious misgovernment by the Ruler of Koweit such as prejudicially to affect foreign citizens in Koweit, we might find ourselves in a difficult position vis-a-vis of the foreign Power concerned.

Mr. Laithwaite said that on this point he thought that Bahrein might be regarded as locus classicus. We had for many years put up with a considerable degree of misgovernment by Sheikh Isa. But when conditions at last, in our view, became intolerable, we did not hesitate to intervene and to depose the Sheikh. There were obvious arguments for doing so, for were we not to intervene when misgovernment had reached a certain pitch, it would be most difficult for us to justify a refusal to allow foreign Governments which might be affected to take steps to protect the interests of their nationals. He did not think that there need be any apprehension in the case of Koweit that we would fail to bring pressure on a sheikh who was abusing his position, once it became necessary to do so. The case for early intervention would probably be stronger now that the Gulf was so much more in the public eye.

The meeting then went on to consider relations between Ibn Saud and Koweit.

Sir Andrew Ryan stated that he had been impressed by the apparent weakness of His Majesty's Government's position vis-a-vis of Ibn Saud with regard to Koweit. His Majesty's Government were not strongly placed when it became necessary to warn Ibn Saud to keep his hands off Koweit, since they were committed to maintaining that Koweit was technically an independent State. A case in point had been the Saudi intrusions into Koweit territory, referred to in paragraph 3 of his note, when Saudi officials had performed acts of authority within the limits of the sheikhdom.

Colonel Fowle pointed out that, in fact, our treaty engagements did entitle us to prevent foreign Powers from dealing direct with the Sheikh. Ibn Saud had certainly been informed of the special relations existing between the Sheikh and His Majesty's Government. Speaking generally, he added that, in fact, little trouble was likely to be experienced with foreigners in Koweit, so long as it remained a Bedouin town ruled by a Bedouin sheikh, and not, like Bahrein, a relatively cosmopolitan commercial centre. If, however, oil were discovered within the sheikhdom, it was possible that difficulties might arise.

Mr. Rendel pointed out that the Arabian air route was likely to develop quickly. If Iraq were to adopt an anti-foreign policy, and Koweit became correspondingly more important as a centre of international traffic, other countries might well wish to take advantage of the facilities there. We might well find many foreign Powers becoming increasingly interested in Koweit. We could not have it both ways, and should sooner or later have to define our position. His Majesty's Government ought, therefore, to orient their policy definitely either towards the greater independence of the sheikhdom or towards a tightening of their own control.

Mr. Laithwaite agreed, and added that, in his view, our policy should be directed towards a closer control, but that it was undesirable to hasten any overt declaration of full control, such as the establishment of a protectorate would be. Such a declaration might well frighten the Sheikhs of Bahrein and of the Trucial Coast, and do more harm than good. The policy to be followed was, therefore, one of occasional minor adjustments, as these became necessary, tending to increase, or at any rate not to relax, our control over the sheikhdom.

Reverting to the question of Saudi-Koweiti relations, Sir Andrew Ryan drew attention to the toleration extended by His Majesty's Government to direct correspondence on business matters between the Sheikh and Ibn Saud. This, no less than the independence formula, placed us in a weak position in defending Koweit, and the correspondence in question was of such long standing that it was difficult now for us to take the line that Ibn Saud should write to us rather than to the Sheikh. What was desirable was that we should be able to tell Ibn Saud openly that we were responsible for defending the Sheikh's interests in any given dispute.

Mr. Laithwaite said that the explanation of the system of direct correspondence between the Sheikh and Ibn Saud was, he thought, that it dated from a time when the latter was not so important a ruler as he had since become, and when we had taken the view that it was unnecessary to take too strict a view of correspondence between sheikh and sheikh. That position was now changed, and reconsideration seemed desirable. Ibn Saud was well aware both that His Majesty's Government conducted the foreign relations of Koweit and that the Sheikh had undertaken certain obligations towards us. He agreed that it was now necessary to exert stricter control over the correspondence in question and to emphasize our own special position in Koweit vis-a-vis of Ibn Saud more definitely than had been the case while Iraq was still under British control. He suggested that we might (a) check Ibn Saud when he appeared to be presuming too far with regard to Koweit--a policy which we were, in fact, now prepared to follow in regard to the Saudi-Koweit blockage; and (b) enforce stricter regulations on the Sheikh in the matter of direct correspondence.

Colonel Fowle agreed. Such action would show both the Sheikh and Ibn Saud that we considered the Sheikh to be under our direction. If we did not take some such step as this, we might be in danger of finding ourselves faced with the results of a kind of conspiracy between the Sheikh and Ibn Saud. We ought, therefore, to write to the Sheikh in the sense that we noted that his private correspondence with Ibn Saud had assumed an increasing importance, and tell him that that correspondence must now cease.

Mr. Rendel concurred. A straightforward control of this nature would be easier to maintain, and would prevent a repetition of such incidents as the letter in which Ibn Saud had recently tried to detach the Sheikh of Koweit from his connexion with His Majesty's Government.

Sir A. Ryan also concurred, and drew attention to the success with which Ibn Saud was spreading the idea that he might naturally absorb Koweit and was bound to do so sooner or later. He pointed out that such an idea could never have prevailed to the extent to which it had, if His Majesty's Government had equally definitely made known their own special position with regard to Koweit.

The meeting then discussed what point in the correspondence between the Sheikh and Ibn Saud could most suitably be taken up in connexion with the reprimand which it was proposed to address to both parties.

Mr. Laithwaite suggested that if it were discovered that the Sheikh had committed himself to Ibn Saud in regard to the grant of an oil concession in the Koweit Neutral Zone, this might be an excellent opportunity for checking him. The question then arose, what action could be taken if the United States Government, in dealing with whom His Majesty's Government had consistently emphasised the Sheikh's independence, were to produce communications from him regarding the grant of a concession in the Neutral Zone? It was, however, agreed that His Majesty's Government could demonstrate from the Sheikh's treaty engagements that he had not been entitled to make any such grant without our knowledge and consent. Eventually it was agreed that the most suitable occasion for the proposed representations to the Sheikh and Ibn Saud would be Ibn Saud's letter suggesting terms for the settlement of the Saudi blockade of Koweit and warning the Sheikh against His Majesty's Government.

At the conclusion of the meeting Sir A. Ryan raised the question of the pressure which might be exerted upon Ibn Saud in regard to the Saudi blockade of Koweit. This blockade had one of two purposes, either to complete the economic strangulation of Koweit and lead to its complete absorption in Saudi Arabia, or else the safeguarding of Saudi economic interests. His Majesty's Government could not possibly allow the first of these alternatives. The question, therefore, was what real force there was in Ibn Saud's suggestion that his own purely economic interests required the maintenance of the blockade.

Colonel Fowle suggested that we might well revert to the Sheikh's proposal that Ibn Saud should have customs posts at a given place along but outside the Koweiti border, and that this might, if necessary, be coupled with a system of manifests for Koweiti-Saudi trade. He gave it as his opinion that even if Ibn Saud were to develop Ras Tanura, possibly with American help, this port was not likely to compete seriously with Koweit, which served quite a different hinterland, nor was there any port between the Koweit area and the Ras Tanura area which could be successfully developed as a rival to Koweit.

Colonel Fowle suggested that on his return to the Gulf on the 16th October he should discuss the situation with Colonel Dickson, Political Agent, Koweit, who had great experience of the sheikhdom, in the light of the conversations at the present meeting, and should submit a comprehensive report. It was agreed that this course should be adopted, and that in the light of the Resident's report and of the conclusions of the present meeting the question of future policy in Koweit should be discussed if necessary in the

Middle East Official Sub-Committee.

The conclusions of the meeting were as follows:-

(1) That in dealing with Ibn Saud, His Majesty's Government should increasingly emphasise the closeness of their relations with the Sheikh.

(2) That the Sheikh should be told that his personal correspondence with Ibn Saud on official matters was to cease.

(3) That the issue of the Saudi blockade of Koweit should be taken up with Ibn Saud by His Majesty's Government on the basis of their obligation to protect the interests of Koweit.

(4) That on receipt of the despatch promised by Colonel Fowle the whole question of relations between His Majesty's Government and Koweit might suitably be referred for further discussion to the Middle East Official Sub-Committee, to which a note should be sent recording the points discussed at the present meeting, and setting forth the arguments for and against the possible declaration of a protectorate.

Appendix A

Note by Sir Andrew Ryan

- - - -

Ibn Saud's Attitude towards Koweit

I HAVE been turning over in my mind for some time the possibility that it may be a definite object of Ibn Saud's policy to reduce Koweit to a position of dependence on him somewhat similar to that of Asir from 1926 to 1930. This is in the nature of a pure speculation, but it is a speculation so interesting that I think it worth while to collect the principal data bearing on it. It must be admitted at the outset that, if Ibn Saud had such an idea in his head, he would realise the need for great caution lest he should indispose His Majesty's Government. His only formal obligation towards the latter is that contained in article 6 of the Treaty of Jedda, but he understands very well the implications of the words therein "who are in special treaty relations with His Britannic Majesty's Government." On the other hand, he has seen His Majesty's Government tolerate direct correspondence on business subjects between him and the Sheikh of Koweit. He might think that they would not react over strongly if he and the Sheikh confronted them with the *fait accompli* of a political deal.

2. Apart from the correspondence, of which we have knowledge, there has been other intercourse between the rulers,

notably the Sheikh's visit to Riadh in 1932, the secret messages brought by Ibn Saud's confidential messenger to the Sheikh early this year, and the Sheikh's mysterious dashes into Nejd last February, when Colonel Dickson surmised that he had gone to meet some high Saudi personage, possibly Ibn Saud himself.

3. I may interpolate, as a minor indication of Ibn Saud's attitude, a reference to two occasions on which it has been suggested or hinted by his Ministry for Foreign Affairs that His Majesty's Government should not concern themselves with affairs between Saudi Arabia and Koweit. I class them as minor, because this position has never been categorically asserted. The first was when, in reply to a complaint of mine regarding Saudi encroachments on Koweit territory, which had perturbed His Majesty's Government, the reply was in effect: "Sorry you have been perturbed. You need not have been if the matter had been pursued through An. Nafisi." On another occasion Fuad Bey, in rather light conversation, asked me why we concerned ourselves in matters between his Government and Koweit.

4. The personal relations between the two rulers are peculiar. Ibn Saud grew up at Koweit, and it is sometimes said that he has shown himself ungrateful to his former hosts. It is said by others, I do not know on what precise grounds, that Mubarak treated Ibn Saud very badly. Anyhow, through all the relations there runs a thread of old friendship,

however flimsy and however frayed by frequent friction over raids, the embargo and so on. It has helped towards the settlement of minor questions. It has not deterred Ibn Saud from enforcing the embargo on trade, but the embargo on trade has not destroyed the Sheikh's ostensible friendliness towards Ibn Saud. They are "Arcades ambo," as I once wrote, and they both combine some real friendship for His Majesty's Government and a healthy fear of them with a good deal of fundamental mistrust.

5. The point of my theory or speculation is that, if the Sheikh of Koweit were at all willing to be "Asirised," Ibn Saud could make the proposal quite attractive on the following lines, if I may venture to put into his mouth the sort of language he could use:-

(a) "You are not really independent, my dear fellow. You are under the thumb of the English. They might annex you at any moment, or even present you to Iraq. If you must be dependent on some one, why be dependent on those untrustworthy imperialists, when you might depend, without being exactly dependent, on a man like me, old friend, fellow Moslem, fellow Arab and the one big independent man in Arabia?

(b) "I don't like squeezing you, I really don't with that embargo. As things are at present, I have to think of my own interests. But if your interests were mine, we could easily have an understanding. A sort of 'Zollverein' as they say; same duties levied in our ports; free competition between yours and mine; free trade over our land border. What have the English done about it? Nothing; because they cannot get at me. 'Sois mon frère et je te fais vivre. Sois le leur et je te tue.'

(c) "I should not mop you up, of course. You would rule your State under an understanding with me. Indeed, if you were in with me, I might recognise a sort of influence of yours over those three Lost Tribes that you always want back. Look at how I treated the Idrisi. I made a sensible agreement with him in 1926. He remained a ruler with tribal influence. I did not take charge in his country, until he got into such a mess that he asked me to in 1930. I did not hit him on the head until the poor mutt thought he could try conclusions with me in 1932. He looked to foreigners and he got it in the neck from me.

(d) "You have had trouble with Iraq over your property there. What has England been able or even willing to do for you? If I had the right to protect you against third parties, you would find that I knew how to see you through.

(e) "Then there's oil. People are after it in my country, and in yours, and in the Neutral Zone. Why not have an agreed policy and present a common front to the West? You know what the Anglo-Persian Oil Company is. Another name for the British Government, as we saw in Persia the other day, even if we had not known it before. Take my tip and keep them out at all costs. Play about with Holmes, if you like. But don't trust him, and remember that in the long run your best policy would be to deal, like me, direct with American interests, using the others to put up the price."

6. It is easy enough to detect fallacies in the above imaginary address. I do not know enough about the Sheikh of Koweit to judge what his reaction to it would be, but many an Arab, not well pleased with British protectors, might find it convincing enough to be attracted into Ibn Saud's parlour.

7. I wrote the above notes in Jedda at the end of June. I thought them too hypothetical at that time to submit them for official consideration. They may, however, be worthy of some attention now that the Political Resident and I are both in this country, and Colonel Dickson will soon be available for consultation. Except that Ibn Saud continues to show a marked anxiety to avoid all complications, I see no material reason to modify what I wrote nearly three months ago, subject always to the consideration that I merely suggest an uncertain working theory to be tested by further examination and by keeping a close watch on future developments.

August 16, 1933.

. . . .

Appendix B.

Note.

Obligations of His Majesty's Government towards the Sheikh of Koweit

- - - - -

(A) Nature of the Undertakings given.

By the agreement of the 23rd January, 1899, His Majesty's Government formally assured the Sheikh "of the good offices of the British Government towards you, your heirs and successors, so long as you, your heirs and successors scrupulously and faithfully observe the conditions of the said bond," under which the Sheikh had pledged himself, his heirs and successors, not to receive the agent or representative of any Power or Government at Koweit without the previous sanction of the British Government, and not to cede, sell, lease or mortgage, or give for occupation or for any other purpose, any portion of his territory to the Government or subjects of any other Power without the previous consent of His Majesty's Government.

2. By article 9 of the Secret Agreement of the 15th October, 1907, for the lease of the Bunder Shweikh foreshore, the Political Agent intimated that he was "duly authorised on behalf of the precious Imperial English Government to promise, and do hereby promise, that the town of Koweit and its boundaries likewise belong to Sheikh Mobarak-us-Suba, Ruler of Koweit, and to his heirs after him, and that all Sheikh Mobarak's arrangements in the matter of customs &c., and all his arrangements at the present day shall remain in the hands of Sheikh Mobarak-us-Suba, Ruler of Koweit, and of his heirs after him, and . . . ." In consideration of this promise the Sheikh undertook not to levy customs dues in excess of 4 per cent on goods imported or exported by "the subjects of the aforesaid English Government," save with the approval of that Government.

3. The undertakings given in writing to the Sheikh on the 3rd November, 1914, in return for his co-operation against the Turks, contained an assurance that "Koweit shall

be recognised as an independent principality under British protection."

(B) Construction of the Undertakings
given to the Sheikh.

4. As will be seen, the engagements entered into by His Majesty's Government with the Sheikh are in rather general terms, and it is perhaps desirable briefly to record the construction placed upon them at various times by His Majesty's Government.

5. In 1901, when there was a Turkish threat to Koweit, the Viceroy was informed (Secretary of State's telegram No. 45 of the 4th December, 1901) that this "appears to constitute a distinct violation of the Sultan's promise" (to respect the status quo), "and in these circumstances His Majesty's Government are prepared to support the Sheikh, and will not tolerate an attack by Turkish troops or ships upon Koweit. The Sheikh should not leave Koweit, and should continue to observe his engagement with us." The assurance given is clearly limited by the words "in these circumstances" to this particular case. Moreover, it is not conditional on, and is independent of the Sheikh's observance of his agreement of 1899.

6. On the 21st March, 1902, Lord Lansdowne, then Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, in a memorandum on the situation in Koweit, remarked that our obligations toward

the Sheikh were "as ill-defined as the boundaries of his principality. We have distinctly announced that he does not enjoy British 'protection'; on the other hand, we once made him a present of 1000 pounds, and promised him our 'good offices,' whatever that may mean. When we made this promise we were, I feel no doubt, thinking of Koweit proper, if there is such a thing, and not of Boobyan or other outskirts over which the Sheikh has rights of one sort or another . . . . . We might, it seems to me, explain (1) to the Porte; (2) to the Sheikh; and (3) to the foreign Powers immediately interested the objects of our policy. I should be inclined to say that our engagements to Koweit do not extend beyond the district adjoining or close to the bay of that name, and to endeavour to obtain the adhesion of the Porte and of the Sheikh to our approximate definition of that district . . . . ."

7. Later, in 1902, it was reported that Ibn Rashid was making energetic preparation for attacking Ibn Saud, then the Sheikh of Koweit's friend, and the Sheikh was warned not to take any action likely to bring him into difficulties with either Nejd or Turkey. About the same time the Sheikh informed us that Ibn Saud had with him a gun presented by the Turks, and asked for a gift of two or three guns, which it was understood were wanted for Jehara to protect Koweit against land attack. The Viceroy (telegram No. 39 of the 3rd October, 1902) proposed to reply

that the Sheikh's request could not be granted, "but that, provided he complied with the injunction conveyed to him in pursuance of your telegram of the 4th December, 1901 (see paragraph 5 above), His Majesty's Government would charge themselves with the defence of Koweit district." The Secretary of State, after consultation with the Foreign Office (Foreign Office letter of the 13th October, 1902), replied (telegram No. 133 of the 14th October, 1902): "I approve your proposed reply about the guns, provided Koweit district is clearly defined as the district adjoining or close to the bay of that name." This assurance similarly admits of being read as an assurance *ad hoc*, and it is relevant that when, in April 1911, enquiry was made by the Secretary of State for India of the Government of India whether the definition in question of Koweit territory had been communicated to the Sheikh, they replied that it might be assumed that it had, but that it "only referred to our pledge to defend him against Ibn Rashid, who was threatening the immediate neighbourhood of Koweit" (telegram of the 6th April, 1911).

8. The more specific undertakings embodied in the Bunder Shweikh lease of 1907, and quoted in paragraph 2 above, may be regarded as to some extent committing us in respect of "the town of Koweit and its boundaries." The phrase "its boundaries" is, however, very vague, and could perhaps most reasonably be construed as applying to the

immediate district around Koweit town. The discussions as to our obligations to the Sheikh which took place in 1911, and which are summarised in paragraphs 9 to 12 below, appear to have turned essentially on the undertakings of 1899.

9. In 1911, in connexion with the Anglo-Turkish negotiations, the question of our obligations was examined in some detail. The Government of India, on being asked, with reference to Lord Lansdowne's memorandum of 1902, to which reference is made in paragraph 6 above, to "define the region to which our obligation extends," and "whether they accepted" general description of boundaries in Persian Gulf Gazetteer, p. 1059, &c., replied: "We are of opinion that (1) our obligations extend to the limits of the Sheikh's territory; (2) these limits, to the best of our knowledge, are defined with fair accuracy by Lorimer, especially as regards northern portion . . . ."

10. The Secretary of State for India, in the light of the Government of India's views, wrote as follows to the Foreign Office (the 8th April, 1911):-

> "Viscount Morley is not aware on what grounds the opinion expressed by the Marquess of Lansdowne in his memorandum of the 21st March, 1902, is based, but he observes that the language used is very tentative, and, so far as he knows, the subject was never pursued along the lines suggested

by his Lordship, except in the case of the attack on the immediate neighbourhood of Koweit threatened by Ibn Rashid in the autumn of 1902. It will be seen from the Government of India's telegram of the 6th April that this incident does not affect their opinion that our general obligations extend to the limits of Koweit territory as described in Vol. II, pp. 1059-1061, of Lorimer's Gazetteer of the Persian Gulf, copy of which is in your possession. In this Lord Morley concurs; that is to say, he thinks that, in the event of unprovoked aggression by the Turks or by Arab tribes under Turkish control, upon those limits, His Majesty's Government could not abstain from using their 'good offices' in the Sheikh's favour. But the term 'good offices' is a very vague one, which His Majesty's Government are at liberty to interpret at their discretion, and which they would doubtless interpret with more or less strictness, according to the nature and locality of the aggression, and all the circumstances of the case. It would, however, in his Lordship's opinion, be very impolitic to attempt, in dealing with the Sheikh, to whittle down the extent of our obligations, since such a course would fill his mind with suspicions, and could not fail to affect

unfavourably our prestige in the Persian Gulf
. . . ."

11. The Foreign Office replied, on the 9th May, 1911, that Sir E. Grey concurred "in the view of the Government of India, shared by Viscount Morley, that these obligations extend to the whole territory of the Sheikh, as described in the passage of Lorimer's Gazetteer of the Persian Gulf to which your letter refers."

12. In August 1911 the Government of India, after consultation with the Political Resident (Sir P. Cox), recommended that His Majesty's Government should communicate to the Turks a copy of the agreement of 1899, with a note that His Majesty's Government had subsequently informed the Sheikh that, so long as he and his heirs and successors acted up to their obligations under the agreement, we charged ourselves to support them and to protect Koweit against attack by land or sea. The Secretary of State for India, on closer consideration, found himself unable to accept this proposal. India Office letter to the Foreign Office of the 30th October, 1911, remarked:-

> "The telegrams of the 4th December, 1901, and the 14th October, 1902, on which the Government of India appear to base the obligation to protect Koweit by land and sea, in the Marquess of Crewe's opinion, clearly refer only to the incidents that occasioned them, and cannot be understood to have given any general undertaking. Nor, in view of

the fact that it has since been decided that our obligations extend to the whole of the Sheikh's territory, as described in Lorimer's Gazetteer, would it be safe to pledge ourselves to any specific method of defending them. As was pointed out by Lord Morley in this Office letter of the 8th April last, the term 'good offices' (which, by Colonel Meade's letter of the 23rd January, 1899, we undertook to accord to the Sheikh) is a conveniently vague one, and Lord Crewe is of opinion that it is neither necessary nor safe to go beyond it. The action taken by His Majesty's Government in 1901-02, when men and guns were landed at Koweit to defend it against unprovoked Turkish aggression, will, moreover, have made it plain to the Porte in what way we are prepared to interpret the term if necessity arises.

"His Lordship would therefore suggest that the formula should run: 'As regards No. 1, His Majesty's Government have informed the Sheikh of Koweit that, so long as he and his heirs and successors act up to their obligations under the agreement, His Majesty's Government undertake to support them and accord them their good offices,' with, perhaps, the addition that His Majesty's Government reserve to themselves the right to interpret that term at their discretion."

The Foreign Office (Foreign Office letter dated the 1st November, 1911) accepted the proposed redraft and addition, and a communication in this sense was made to Tevfik Pasha in Sir Edward Grey's letter of the 24th October, 1911.

13. The undertaking given in 1914 that Koweit "shall be recognised as an independent principality under British protection," may be regarded as importing a degree of responsibility for the protection of the principality as a whole.

14. On the death of Sheikh Mobarak his eldest son was informed, in March 1916, on his accession, by the Viceroy, that, "so long as you act up to the existing arrangements with the British Government, you may expect the same support as was enjoyed by your father." A similar assurance was given on Sheikh Jabir's death in 1917, to his brother and successor, Sheikh Salim, in March 1917. Sheikh Salim's conduct was unsatisfactory, and it was found necessary to warn him, through the Political Resident, on the 5th July, 1918, that the assurances (which presumably covered the assurance of the 3rd November, 1914) conveyed to him on his accession were conditional on his good behaviour, and that, should acts "contrary to the interests of His Majesty's Government unfortunately be committed in Future," he would be held personally responsible.

15. In connexion with the operations against the Ikhwan in 1928, the question of the precise extent of the

obligations of His Majesty's Government for the defence of Koweit was considered in the India Office, when the view was put forward that consideration of our engagements suggested that, on a strict reading, our liability could be confined to the protection of the town of Koweit, and that we are not called upon to protect Koweit territory as a whole. The history of the 1928 discussion is, however, examined in greater detail in Appendix C, to the conclusions of which attention is invited.

Conclusion

16. As will be seen from the correspondence summarised above, (a) we appear consistently to have taken the view that our obligations are conditional on the good behaviour of the Sheikh; (b) secondly, that, subject to this reservation, we are committed to "good offices" in respect of "Koweit," an assurance which has, since 1911, been accepted as extending to the whole territory of the sheikhdom, but which would not commit us to anything further than diplomatic support; (c) thirdly, that we have promised "that the town of Koweit and its boundaries" belong to the heirs of Sheikh Mobarak (while the payment of rent for the Bunder Shweikh site was terminated in 1907, the agreement of 1907 was not abrogated, and the reciprocal pledges embodied in that agreement should apparently still be regarded as binding in so far as they are not affected by other subsequent instruments. We communicated article 9 of the Bunder

Shweikh Agreement to Ibn Saud in 1928; and in 1933 the Political Agent, Koweit, and the Political Resident brought to notice the continued existence of the obligations of the Sheikh in regard to customs duties (paragraph 2 above) under article 10 of the agreement); (d) fourthly, that we have undertaken to recognise, and have in fact recognised, Koweit as an independent principality under British protection. No definition has been given or attempted of the meaning of "British protection" in this connexion; and, while prima facie the Sheikh would apparently be justified in claiming that it represented an assurance of effective protection in respect of the whole of his principality, there is some room for discussion as to its precise implications, and it is noteworthy that no appeal appears to have been made under it either by the present Sheikh or by his predecessors.

J. G. LAITHWAITE

India Office, October 11, 1933

- - - - - - - - - - - - -

Appendix C

Supplementary Note.

Question of Liability for the Protection of Koweit Against Aggression from Outside, 1928-29.

Akhwan raids on Koweit had taken place in 1924 and 1925, but on an inconsiderable scale. The Akhwan raids on Iraq by Feisal-al-Dawish and the Mutair tribe at the end of 1927 had, however, more important reactions on the principality. At the request of the Sheikh His Majesty's Government agreed to aerial reconnaissance over his territory; and, with his concurrence, it was later decided to withdraw the restrictions originally imposed by His Majesty's Government on bombing in pursuit of raiders within Koweit territory. An Akhwan raid was successfully dealt with by Koweit forces at El Riqai on the 27th January, 1928, and whilst retiring into Nejd was pursued and successfully attacked by the Royal Air Force on two following days. A further raid occurred late in February, which was not opposed by ground forces, but was again successfully pursued by the Royal Air Force for two days. In view of the possibility of further serious developments, and of the recognised liability of His Majesty's Government under existing engagements for the "protection of Koweit" (a phrase the exact scope of which is open to argument), further defence measures were now taken. A temporary air base (political objections to a permanent station being regarded as conclusive) was established in Koweit: a flight of aeroplanes and a detachment of armoured cars were despatched to the town for its protection: three vessels of the Persian Gulf Squadron (later reduced to one) were stationed off Koweit itself, and a landing party disembarked and remained on shore until the crisis had passed. All action taken was taken with the concurrence of the Sheikh, who was, in addition, allowed to purchase from the Government of India a small supply of machine guns and Lewis guns. After some discussion His Majesty's Government and the Government of India agreed that his Excellency might be allowed to purchase armoured motor cars, on the understanding that they would be used only for defence, and would not cross the borders of Koweit in repelling raids save with the concurrence of the Political Agent. The crisis, however, passed off without incident, and the special forces which had been despatched to Koweit were withdrawn during the late spring. For financial reasons the Sheikh abandoned the idea of purchasing armoured cars.

2. On the 15th August, 1928, the Air Officer Commanding, Iraq, in order to provide against all eventualities, asked permission to send car or air reconnaissances into Koweit territory and to establish a defence air base at Koweit in the event of a raid. The India Office remarked (letter of the 22nd August, 1928): "The Secretary of State would see strong objection on political grounds to the use of Koweit territory in connexion with air operations against the Akhwan, by which Koweit was not directly or immediately threatened. Having regard, however, to the treaty liability of His Majesty's Government for the protection of Koweit and to the action taken with the consent of the Sheikh in the early part of this year, he would see no objection to the grant of the authority now requested when Koweit was directly or indirectly menaced, on the understanding that the prior consent of the Sheikh was obtained from the Resident

. . . . so far as may be practicable, on each specific occasion, and subject to the further restriction that there shall be no question of establishing a permanent base in Koweit territory." As the result of considerable further interdepartmental discussion, the Air Officer Commanding was authorised on the 25th September, at his discretion, to carry out occasional reconnaissances over Koweit territory, both by air and car. "His Majesty's Government are anxious, however that--

> (1) These reconnaissances shall be carried out as frequently and in as unprovocative a manner as possible, and
>
> (2) That the Sheikh shall be given no ground for supposing that responsibility for the defence of Koweit has been assumed by His Majesty's Government, or that he himself has been relieved of his obligations in this respect. These considerations should be borne in mind by the Air Officer Commanding in acting under the authority now given him." (Colonial Office telegram to Bagdad, No. 306, dated the 25th September, 1928).

3. Approval was subsequently given in view of a threatened Akhwan raid over the border, to the concentration, subject to the approval of the Sheikh, of armoured cars in Koweit "for protection of Iraqi tribes for so long a period

as one month." (Colonial Office telegram to Bagdad, No. 76, dated the 23rd February, 1929).

4. In April 1929 the question of the policy to be adopted by the Sheikh of Koweit in the event of Nejdi tribesmen taking refuge from King Ibn Saud in Koweit territory arose, the air authorities suggested that the Sheikh should be asked to concur in the use, if necessary, of military force, the nature and extent of which should be determined by the Air Officer Commanding, Iraq, for the purpose of preventing any such refugees from entering or remaining in any part of Koweit territory. On the 8th May, 1929, the India Office, in a letter to the Colonial Office, remarked: "Viscount Peel gathers that the attitude of the Sheikh is no longer in question and that he has already promised to endeavour to prevent refugees making use of Koweit territory. As regards the question of giving the Sheikh military assistance for this purpose, the Secretary of State remains of his previous opinion that it is undesirable to extend in any way the general liability hitherto accepted by His Majesty's Government for the defence of Koweit territory, if this can at all be avoided . . . . . It would, on the whole, be preferable, if possible, to avoid asking the Sheikh to concur in the use of military force, but if . . . . such a request is still essential, he is prepared to agree that the Sheikh should be asked to concur . . . . ." The other Departments regarded it as essential to make a request in

sense referred to of the Sheikh and the necessary instructions were sent to the High Commissioner on the 11th May.

5. The view held as regards our liability for protection of Koweit during the operations of 1928-29 is perhaps best stated in the India Office letters of the 22nd August, 1928, and the 8th May, 1929, quoted in paragraphs 2 and 4 above. While our precise liability for protection was not investigated in any great detail, the course of action adopted in dealing with threats to Koweit territory appears to have been generally consistent with the construction of our liability suggested by Colonel Fowle in paragraph 10 of Bushire despatch No. 1365-S of the 25th October, 1933.(1)

J. G. LAITHWAITE.

India Office, February 6, 1934.

---

(1) (Note--The paragraph referred to runs as follows: "The 1914 agreement states that in return for the Sheikh's co-operation against the Turks 'Koweit shall be recognised as an independent principality under British protection.' This, unlike the phraseology of the previous agreements, is a most categorical assurance, and the word 'principality' and not 'town' being used, would seem definitely to place the responsibility of protecting the whole of the Koweit Sheikhdom on His Majesty's Government. Personally, I cannot agree with the view quoted in paragraph 15 of the India Office note, that 'on a strict reading our liability could be confined to the protection of the town of Koweit, and that we are not called upon to protect Koweit as a whole.' It is true, as pointed out in the note, paragraph 16 (d), that neither the present Sheikh, nor his predecessors, appear to have appealed under this agreement to His Majesty's Government, but that hardly relieves us from our obligations. This does not imply, of course, that His Majesty's Government's obligations relieve the Sheikh completely of the responsibility

2. India Office to Foreign Office.--(Received November 22).

India Office,
November 21, 1933.

Sir,

I AM directed by the Secretary of State for India to transmit to you, for the information of the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, copy of a letter from the Political Resident in the Persian Gulf respecting relations with Koweit.

I am, &c.
S. F. STEWART.

. . . .

Enclosure in 2.

Political Resident, Persian Gulf, to Secretary of State for India.

(Confidential.)

Bushire, October 25, 1933.

Sir,

I HAVE the honour to refer to your letter dated the 13th October, 1933, enclosing a copy of the record of an

---

of his own defence. The Sheikh should certainly be able to deal with any small raids across his frontiers, and should only look for assistance from His Majesty's Government in the case of more serious incursions. This, in fact, was presumably the attitude taken up after the Akhwan operations of 1928, when the Sheikh was encouraged to purchase half-a-dozen Ford vanettes, Lewis guns, which were mounted in the vanettes, and ammunition, and when some of his men received training from the Royal Air Force as machine-gunners.")

interdepartmental meeting held at the Foreign Office on the 5th instant, note by Sir Andrew Ryan on Ibn Saud's attitude towards Koweit, and India Office provisional note, dated the 11th October, 1933, on the obligations of His Majesty's Government towards the Sheikh of Koweit. I discussed the matter with the Political Agent, Koweit, when I passed through there recently on my way to Bushire.

2. One of the two questions (the other is dealt with below in paragraphs 7 and 8) discussed at the meeting was, briefly, whether, with a view to maintaining our control over Koweit, which was undoubtedly fast increasing in importance as a political and strategical centre in the Middle East, (a) it was advisable to declare a British protectorate over that sheikhdom, or (b) whether sufficient control could not be obtained over it by adopting a policy of tightening up our control over the sheikh as opportunity offered by filling in the gaps which at present existed in our agreements with him.

3. As will be seen from the record, prima facie, I favoured (b) rather than (a), and further reflection and my discussion with Colonel Dickson, who agrees with me, has confirmed me in that opinion. The objections to (a) are that, in our (i.e., Colonel Dickson and my) opinion, a protectorate would most probably meet with considerable opposition from the sheikh, who, while valuing his British connexion, values equally highly his independence in the eyes of his fellow Arab rulers, and the outside world in general. The declaration

of such a protectorate would likewise alarm the other sheikhs on the Arab coast of the Gulf. It might also involve His Majesty's Government in a measure of interference in the internal affairs of Koweit which can at present be avoided. The question of slavery in Koweit, for example, as part of the slavery question in the Gulf generally, will doubtless be raised in the future by the recently established Permanent Slavery Committee of the League of Nations, and as we have no slave agreement with the ruler, such as exists with the other Arab rulers by which the local Political Agent can manumit slaves, the Koweit aspect of this problem offers special difficulties. So long as Koweit remains "independent," His Majesty's Government's responsibility in the matter is presumably limited to representations and persuasions to the sheikh. In the event, however, of a British protectorate being declared over the sheikhdom, His Majesty's Government might possibly be committed to more drastic action. Finally, it is not improbable, though this is a matter outside my sphere, that the declaration of a Koweit protectorate might lead to somewhat awkward accusations from other Governments of "land" grabbing and the like, with which we have been familiar enough in the past with regard to other areas.

4. An examination of the alternative policy (b) shows that, unsatisfactory as our present treaty relationship with the sheikh may be (as was pointed out at the meeting), we have a certain control over the ruler (see India Office

note--Obligations of His Majesty's Government towards the Sheikh of Koweit), and where our agreements show gaps, these can, to a large extent, be filled up. Thus, control of aviation through Koweit, whether military or civil, would be in the hands of His Majesty's Government under the proposed air agreement (vide correspondence ending with India Office letter dated the 11th August, 1933, to the Government of India, Foreign and Political Department), with the sheikh, while the proposed amendment of the Koweit Order in Council (vide correspondence ending with Government of India, Foreign and Political Department, express letter dated the 21st August, 1933, to His Majesty's Secretary of State for India) would place jurisdiction over non-Moslem foreigners in Koweit in the hands of the Political Agent.

5. A third "gap" is the habit of direct correspondence which has grown up between the sheikh and Ibn Saud, and which was dealt with at some length at the meeting. The outcome of my discussion with Colonel Dickson on this point is as follows: There would appear to be two ways in which we can ensure control over this correspondence:-

(1) By informing the sheikh that before despatching any official communication to Ibn Saud he should show it to the Political Agent, and should take similar action with communications received from Ibn Saud. This has been the sheikh's custom in the past, at any rate in regard to his outward correspondence; whether he has shown all Ibn

Saud's official letters to Colonel Dickson, we do not, of course, know. After the sheikh had received our communication, which would, of course, be tactfully worded and would merely ask him to continue the practice which he already observed, he would not be able to quote officially any letters which he had not shown to the Political Agent. If, for instance, in order to present His Majesty's Government with a *fait accompli* on some point agreed upon between Ibn Saud and himself, he should produce a communication which had not been seen by the Political Agent, we could ignore it.

Both Colonel Dickson and I think that perhaps it would be better in our communication not to refer to any particular correspondence, but to treat the matter on general grounds.

The above refers, of course, to official correspondence; nothing we can do will prevent 'private and personal' letters passing between the two potentates.

(2) The second alternative is to insist that official correspondence between the sheikh and Ibn Saud should pass through His Majesty's Government's local representatives: the Minister at Jedda, and the Political Agent, Koweit (or, perhaps, the Resident, Persian Gulf). This is already the procedure in force (at the sheikh's own request) in regard to the sheikh's correspondence with the Iraq Government, and so no new departure in principle would be

involved. The advantage of this alternative would be its emphasis to Ibn Saud of the special relations that Koweit has with His Majesty's Government, which emphasis is apparently particularly needed at the present juncture (vide conclusion 1 of the meeting). As against this advantage, Colonel Dickson is of the opinion that the sheikh, who regards Ibn Saud, in spite of the latter's treatment of Koweit, in a somewhat different light to Iraq, might object more or less strongly to the proposal.

6. Considering all the circumstances, I would suggest that I be authorised to instruct Colonel Dickson to approach the sheikh verbally on the following lines: That His Majesty's Government have had it recently brought to their notice that Ibn Saud apparently harbours designs of trying to reduce Koweit to a position of dependence on him, similar--for instance--to that of Asir; that it is possible that the practice of direct correspondence between him--the sheikh--and Ibn Saud which has grown up of late, even though he--the sheikh--shows the correspondence to the Political Agent, has somewhat obscured in the eyes of Ibn Saud the fact of Koweit's special relations of protection, &c., with His Majesty's Government; that it would put this correspondence on a safer and more regular footing, if it was conducted as was the correspondence with the Iraq Government, i.e., through His Majesty's Government's local representatives; that, in addition, an intimation to this effect to Ibn Saud

would bring sharply to his notice Koweit's relations with His Majesty's Government; and that, finally, His Majesty's Government would be glad to learn, confidentially and informally, what were his--the sheikh's--reactions to the proposal.

I trust I may be authorised to take this step as soon as possible, and when the sheikh's attitude has become known I will make recommendations as to which alternative should be adopted.

7. The other question discussed at the meeting (referred to at the beginning of paragraph 2 above) was the exact extent of His Majesty's Government's obligations to protect the interests of Koweit. The most important of these obligations, which are dealt with in the India Office note on the subject, and the one which in a sense determines any others there may be is that of protection against hostile incursions or invasions. His Majesty's Government's agreements with the sheikh are three in number: that of January 1899, that of October 1907 and that of November 1914.

8. The agreement of 1899, as far as "protection" is concerned, in return for the good behaviour of the sheikh and his successors, merely promised "the good offices" of His Majesty's Government, "whatever that may mean" as Lord Lansdowne later remarked. Our construction of this agreement appears to have been the convenient one that we could choose the circumstances in which we need, or need not, protect Koweit in any particular crisis that arose, the

exact area which we were responsible for defending being left more or less vague.

9. The agreement of 1907 merely confirmed from His Majesty's Government that "the town of Koweit and its boundaries" belonged to the sheikh of that day and his successors. This agreement in no way added, in principle, to our nebulous responsibilities for the defence of Koweit, though, possibly, read with that of 1899, it might increase these responsibilities up to the "boundaries."

10. The 1914 agreement states that, in return for the sheikh's co-operation against the Turks, "Koweit shall be recognised as an independent principality under British protection." This, unlike the phraseology of the previous agreements, is a most categorical assurance, and the word "principality," and not "town," being used would seem definitely to place the responsibility of protecting the whole of the Koweit sheikhdom on His Majesty's Government. Personally, I cannot agree with the view quoted in paragraph 15 of the India Office note that "on a strict reading our liability could be confined to the protection of the town of Koweit, and that we are not called upon to protect Koweit as a whole." It is true, as pointed out in the note (paragraph 16 (d)), that neither the present sheikh, nor his predecessors, appear to have appealed under this agreement to His Majesty's Government, but that hardly relieves us from our obligations. This does not imply, of course, that His

Majesty's Government's obligations relieve the sheikh completely of the responsibility of his own defence. The sheikh should certainly be able to deal with any small raids across his frontiers, and should only look for assistance from His Majesty's Government in the case of more serious incursions. This, in fact, was presumably the attitude taken up after the Akhwan operations of 1928, when the sheikh was encouraged to purchase half a dozen Ford vanettes, Lewis guns which were mounted in the vanettes, and ammunition, and when some of his men received training from the Royal Air Force as machine gunners.

11. In conclusion, I venture to suggest that this question, the exact extent of the obligations of His Majesty's Government for the protection of Koweit, be investigated with a view to a definite decision on the subject. The question is an important one, and the advantages of having a clear conception of what our responsibilities may be in time of crisis, before such a crisis arises, are obvious.

I am sending copies of this despatch to the Government of India and His Majesty's Minister at Jedda.

I have, &c.,
T. C. FOWLE, Leiutenant-Colonel,
Political Resident in the
Persian Gulf.

- - - - - - - - - -

3. Mr. Johnstone to Mr. Laithwaite.

Foreign Office,
November 25, 1933.

My dear Laithwaite,

WITH reference to our telephone conversation yesterday, I write to confirm what I said to you about Ryan's views on the proposed instructions to Dickson, which are outlined in paragraph 6 of Fowle's official letter of the 25th October regarding Saudi-Koweit relations.

On a cursory reading of that letter, Ryan concurred generally in the proposed instructions, except for the opening clause, which states that Ibn Saud intends to reduce Koweit to the same sort of position as Asir. In Ryan's view, it is undesirable to say anything to the sheikh in the sense of that clause, as it might conceivably come to the ears of Ibn Saud, whether through the sheikh or indirectly, with unfortunate effect on our relations with him. Ryan therefore suggests that this sentence should be omitted from the instructions.

I send you this simply as a record of Ryan's remarks to me; I gather that he spoke to you in the same sense. Fowle's letter has not yet been considered by my higher authorities.

Yours sincerely,
KENNETH JOHNSTONE.

- - - - - - - - - - - -

4. India Office to Foreign Office (Received February 1.)

India Office, February 1, 1934.

Sir:

I AM directed by the Secretary of State for India to say that he has had under his consideration the proceedings of the interdepartmental meeting held at the Foreign Office on Thursday, the 5th October, 1933, to discuss relations between His Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom and the Sheikh of Koweit, and also the Political Resident's despatch of the 25th October, 1933, containing Colonel Fowle's recommendations on the tentative conclusions of the meeting in question in the light of discussion of them with the Political Agent, Koweit.

2. In the light of Colonel Fowle's views, Sir Samuel Hoare is definitely of opinion that the question of declaring a protectorate over Koweit should not at present be further pursued, and he considers that it should be possible to ensure a sufficient degree of British control over the sheikhdom by adopting a policy of tightening up our control over the sheikh as opportunity offers, by filling in the gaps which at present exist in the agreements between the sheikh and His Majesty's Government. The gaps (with the exception of that discussed in the following paragraph and of a slavery agreement) are not, in fact, very serious. Apart from the major assurances contained in the agreement of 1899, the sheikh has already given undertakings in respect

of the arms traffic; he is precluded from granting a pearling, sponge-fishing, or oil concession without the approval of His Majesty's Government (though as regards oil the specific undertaking contained in the letter of the 27th October, 1913 (No. XLI on p. 264 of Volume XI of the 1929 edition of Aitchison's Treaties), is by no means so clear as could be desired); the control of aviation, whether military or civil, in his State will pass to His Majesty's Government in the event of his accepting the proposals which the Resident has recently been instructed to make to him on this subject; while the proposed amendment of the Koweit Order in Council, once the sheikh's concurrence in this has been obtained, will place the question of jurisdiction over non-Moslem foreigners in his State on a securer and more satisfactory basis.

3. The delicate question of the direct correspondence which has gradually established itself between the sheikh and Ibn Saud remains for consideration. Sir Samuel Hoare has considered the alternatives discussed in paragraph 5 of Colonel Fowle's despatch of the 25th October, and as a result he is of opinion, subject to the views of the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, that the first alternative suggested by the Resident (which incidentally is, apparently, likely to prove the less objectionable to the sheikh) is the right solution. Subject to Sir John Simon's concurrence, he would propose, however, to approve the Resident's recommendation that Colonel Dickson should approach the sheikh verbally

on the lines suggested in paragraph 6 of Bushire despatch under consideration, with the modification suggested in Mr. Johnstone's demi-official letter of the 25th November last to Mr. Laithwaite. Sir Samuel Hoare would also propose that it might be left to Colonel Fowle's discretion, after the sheikh's attitude has become known, to settle the matter in accordance with either of the alternatives discussed in paragraph 5 of his despatch. The important question whether special action should be taken to emphasise at Jedda to Ibn Saud the nature of the relations which exist between His Majesty's Government and the sheikh might be considered when a report has been received from Colonel Fowle.

4. The question of the obligations of His Majesty's Government for the protection of Koweit, to which the Resident refers in paragraphs 7 - 11 of his despatch, is one of considerable importance. The general position is examined in the India Office memorandum B. 427/P.Z. 6535/33, of which copies have already been communicated to the Foreign Office. The Secretary of State agrees with the Political Resident that the agreements of 1899 and 1907, containing as they do merely a promise of good offices, the applicability of which to the whole sheikhdom as distinct from the town of Koweit is open to doubt, are not of great material importance so far as "protection" is concerned. The undertaking of real importance is that given to the sheikh in 1914 in return for the co-operation of his predecessor against the Turks.

5. Subject to Sir John Simon's views, Sir Samuel Hoare, on a consideration of the position as a whole, is in agreement with Colonel Fowle's view that the phraseology of this undertaking and the use of the word "sheikhdom" and not "town" would appear to place definitely a responsibility for the protection of the whole principality of Koweit on His Majesty's Government. He is, at the same time, in entire agreement with the Resident that such an obligation, if His Majesty's Government now formally confirm that they recognise its existence, cannot be regarded as relieving the sheikh completely of the responsibility of his own defence, and that "the sheikh should certainly be able to deal with any small raids across his frontiers and should only look for assistance from His Majesty's Government after the Akhwan operations of 1928-29, though it is relevant that no close examination of the precise obligations in the matter of His Majesty's Government was undertaken at that time. Should Sir John Simon share the views expressed in this paragraph, Sir Samuel Hoare will cause the Resident to be instructed accordingly.

6. While the Secretary of State, as stated above, would be opposed to the declaration of a protectorate, and is satisfied, as at present advised, that the desiderata of His Majesty's Government can be sufficiently secured by indirect tightening up of our control over the sheikh, he is at the same time impressed by the informal character of the engagements which have been entered into on behalf of

Koweit. He would, therefore, be disposed to see advantage in consolidating the various undertakings which have from time to time been given on either side in a formal treaty on the lines of the Qatar Treaty of 1916, could this be secured without much difficulty. This would probably involve a reiteration and possibly a more formal specification by His Majesty's Government of their responsibility for protection of the principality of Koweit. Moreover, as stated in the India Office note B. 427/P.Z. 6535/33 on this subject, the assurances at present given to the sheikh are, in practice, renewed to each successor in return for his acceptance of the obligations, liability for which was accepted by his predecessors, and in 1918 it appears to have been held that our obligations held good only so long as the ruling sheikh on his side complied with his engagements. It is arguable that a formal treaty might place a heavier burden on His Majesty's Government without correspondingly binding the sheikh. But it seems doubtful whether this view could, in fact, be sustained. Formal recognition by His Majesty's Government of a Sheikh of Koweit would presumably be necessary before the engagements entered into with previous sheikhs could be regarded as binding on either party. Any formal comprehensive treaty which might be drawn up could presumably be so framed as to make it clear that obligations were entirely reciprocal, and that the liability of His Majesty's Government held good only so long as they were satisfied with the performance by the sheikh of his obligations under the treaty. Finally, so far as protection is concerned, if the view suggested in paragraph 5 above is accepted, that a general liability (within the limits described) for the protection of the principality of Koweit as a whole must already be regarded as resting on His Majesty's Government, no material increase of their responsibilities would be involved in reiterating their acceptance of that liability in a formal treaty, while the mere fact of reiteration might make it easier to obtain the consent of the sheikh to a consolidating agreement. The Secretary of State would welcome Sir John Simon's views on this point.

7. Subject to the views of the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, the Secretary of State would suggest that, in view of the small margin of difference which appears to exist between the provisional recommendations of the interdepartmental conference of the 5th October last, the recommendations of the Political Resident in the Persian Gulf, and the proposals in this letter, it will be unnecessary, if those proposals commend themselves to Sir John Simon, to refer the question for discussion to the Official Middle East Sub-Committee. Copies of the relevant papers might, however, once final instructions have been sent to the Political Resident in the Persian Gulf, be circulated for information to the other Departments represented on that committee.

I am, &c.,
J. C. WALTON.

E 775/739/91

5. Foreign Office to India Office.

Foreign Office,
February 24, 1934.

Sir,

I AM directed by Secretary Sir John Simon to request that you will lay before Secretary Sir Samuel Hoare the following observations on India Office letter of the 1st February, regarding relations between His Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom and the Sheikh of Koweit.

2. Sir John Simon concurs in the view expressed in paragraph 2 of that letter that the question of declaring a protectorate over Koweit should not for the present be further pursued.

3. With regard to the question of direct correspondence between the sheikh and King Ibn Saud, Sir John Simon agrees that the sheikh should first be sounded orally in the sense suggested in paragraph 3 of your letter. He would, however, suggest that thereafter the Political Resident should report further which of the alternative courses of action discussed in paragraph 5 of his despatch of the 25th October, 1933, he recommends, before adopting either, in order that His Majesty's Minister at Jedda may be given an opportunity of furnishing his observations. As at present advised, Sir John Simon is inclined to prefer the second alternative proposed by Colonel Fowle (viz., that all official correspondence between the sheikh and Ibn Saud

should pass exclusively through the Political Resident or Political Agent and his Majesty's representative at Jedda), as emphasising more strongly the special position of His Majesty's Government in Koweit, and placing a more effectual check upon Ibn Saud's attempts to strengthen his own position there to the detriment of that held by His Majesty's Government. This course would, in Sir John Simon's view, have the additional advantage that the influence of His Majesty's representative at Jedda could, when necessary, be more easily exerted upon the Saudi Government, if he were the actual channel of the sheikh's communications.

4. In any case, it appears that, were the first alternative adopted, it would not be sufficient simply to exercise a discreet control in Koweit over direct correspondence between King Ibn Saud and the sheikh. For, although the sheikh's side of the correspondence would be seen by the Political Agent, there would be no indication of this fact on the document which reached Ibn Saud. If, therefore, the sheikh were to send Ibn Saud a letter which the Political Agent had not seen and which His Majesty's Government wished to repudiate on that ground, they might find some difficulty in establishing with King Ibn Saud the fact that they were justified in doing so, since, so far as he could see, this letter would be no less authentic than others which he had exchanged with the sheikh, and which he had been tacitly led to consider perfectly in order. It would, therefore,

in Sir John Simon's view, be necessary to add to those of the sheikh's letters which the Political Agent had seen and approved some indication of that fact. But such an arrangement would probably in the sheikh's eyes be as unwelcome a limitation on his official correspondence with Ibn Saud as the second alternative proposed by Lieutenant-Colonel Fowle.

5. It further appears to Sir John Simon that, since it is proposed in the first place, when sounding the sheikh orally, to suggest to him that all his official correspondence with Ibn Saud should be conducted through His Majesty's local representatives, to fall back later on the first alternative proposed by Lieutenant-Colonel Fowle would represent a weakening on the part of His Majesty's Government, which on general grounds would be better avoided.

6. A final decision in the matter must, however, evidently depend upon the report furnished by Lieutenant-Colonel Fowle after the preliminary oral approach to the sheikh.

7. As regards the obligations of His Majesty's Government in respect of the protection of Koweit, Sir John Simon agrees with the views expressed in paragraphs 4 and 5 of your letter under reply.

8. He has also considered the proposal in paragraph 6 of that letter for the conclusion of a new and comprehensive treaty between His Majesty's Government in

the United Kingdom and the sheikh, which should include inter alia the acceptance by His Majesty's Government of a general liability for the protection of the whole sheikhdom within the limits indicated in paragraph 10 of Colonel Fowle's despatch of the 25th October, referred to above. While agreeing that there would be advantage in such a treaty, Sir John Simon assumes that it is not proposed to undertake the negotiation of it immediately. Prima facie it seems inadvisable to raise a possibly controversial issue of such importance with the sheikh until the question of his relations with King Ibn Saud and that of the projected oil concession (which appears likely to indispose the sheikh, since he may lose financially by the elimination of competition between the Anglo-Persian Oil Company and the United States oil interests) have been disposed of.

9. As regards the possibility mentioned in paragraph 6 of your letter, that a formal treaty might be considered to place a heavier burden on His Majesty's Government than that which they at present bear in respect of Koweit, without correspondingly binding the sheikh, I am to observe that, in accordance with the construction which is usually placed upon treaties with heads of States, any formal treaty concluded with the Sheikh of Koweit would attach to Koweit as a State, and would apply automatically to the sheikh's successors. The undertakings given by the two contracting parties to a treaty must

certainly be construed as reciprocal. Sir John Simon notes, however, from statements made by the India Office representative at the meeting held at the Foreign Office on the 5th October to discuss this question, that it is considered that His Majesty's Government could and would remove a Sheikh of Koweit for hopeless misgovernment. He presumes, therefore, that His Majesty's Government could in practice prevent the accession of a ruler who seemed unlikely to observe his treaty obligations towards them, or could, at any rate, remove a ruler who after his accession in fact refused to observe those obligations. If this be so, there appears no ground for fearing that a situation might arise in which His Majesty's Government would be faced with the alternatives either of acquiescing in a refusal by the sheikh to recognise his treaty obligations or of putting an end to their treaty relations with Koweit.

10. Sir John Simon concurs in the view of Sir Samuel Hoare that it is unnecessary to refer this question to the Official Middle East Sub-Committee, but he assumes that copies of the relevant papers will be circulated later to the Departments represented thereupon.

I am, &c.,

G. W. RENDEL.

- - - - - - - - - - - - -

E 1593/739/91

6. India Office to Foreign Office (Received March 12)

India Office,
March 10, 1934.

Sir,

I AM directed by the Secretary of State for India to transmit to you, for the information of the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, copy of a letter to the Political Resident in the Persian Gulf respecting Koweit policy.

I am, &c.
S. F. STEWART

- - - - - - - - - - -

Enclosure in 6.

Secretary of State for India to the Political Resident, Persian Gulf.

India Office,
March 9, 1934.

Sir,

IN reply to your confidential despatch of the 25th October, on the subject of the relations between His Majesty's Government and the Sheikh of Koweit, I am directed by the Secretary of State for India to refer to the correspondence (Nos. 3, 4 and 5), copies of which have already been sent to you and to the Government of India.

2. In the light of the correspondence in question, the Secretary of State agrees that the question of declaring a protectorate over Koweit should not for the present be further pursued.

3. On the subject of direct correspondence between the sheikh and King Ibn Saud, the Secretary of State, in the light of the considerations adduced in paragraphs 3 - 6 of the Foreign Office letter of the 24th February, agrees with the course of action therein suggested by Sir John Simon. I am to request that you will be good enough to instruct Lieutenant-Colonel Dickson to approach the sheikh accordingly, and that you will in due course submit a further report when the result of Colonel Dickson's discussions with his Excellency is known and you are in a position to make recommendations as to the line to be adopted in pursuing this matter with the sheikh.

4. On the question of the obligations of His Majesty's Government in respect of the protection of Koweit, you will observe that the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs has expressed his agreement with the views contained in paragraphs 4 and 5 of India Office letter of the 1st February, 1934. The Foreign Office print, of which a copy is sent herewith (No. 1), contains a supplementary historical note prepared in this Office on the question of the view taken in 1928-29 as to the liability of His Majesty's Government for the protection of Koweit against aggression from outside.

5. The Secretary of State would be glad in due course to receive your views on the proposal referred to in paragraph 6 of India Office letter of the 1st February for the conclusion of a new and comprehensive treaty between His Majesty's Government and the Sheikh of Koweit. The matter is not one of immediate urgency, and it may well be that, as suggested by the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, there may be advantage in deferring any reference to it until further progress has been made in the disposal of the vexed question of the relations of the sheikh with King Ibn Saud and the questions of oil concessions for Koweit proper and the neutral zone between Koweit and Nejd.

6. The interdepartmental meeting of the 5th October recommended, inter alia, that the issue of the Saudi blockade of Koweit should be taken up with King Ibn Saud by His Majesty's Government on the basis of their obligation to protect the interests of Koweit. Disposal of this question has been deferred pending a decision on the matters discussed in the present letter, but steps are now being taken to deal with it as a matter of urgency.

7. Copies of this letter are being sent for information to the Government of India and to the Political Agent at Koweit.

I am, &c.

J. C. WALTON.

APPENDIX 3

Middle East Library, St. Antony's College, Oxford

APPENDIX 3

NOTE ON THE SHABIBA MOVEMENT OF IRAQ: ITS AIMS AND METHODS

CONFIDENTIAL

(A) GENERAL

The Shabiba Movement or Young Mens Association, is not really a Youth organization at all, but has been given that name by interested Arab politicians and wire pullers, so as to attract and mould the rising generation of Arabs into a proper frame of mind for combating what the leaders like to call the foreign colonizers of Arab lands.

The movement is definitely a political one and resembles the "Hitler Youth Movement". Almost certainly it has been copied from the latter, and possibly originates in Berlin.

It is definitely an anti-French and anti-British organization and openly avows that it is working for the removal of British influence from Arab countries, its immediate object being to oust France from Syria and force

---

*H.P.R. Dickson, Private Papers, Middle East Library, St. Antony's College, Oxford.

Great Britain to grant independence to the Arabs of Palestine. It believes that Great Britain has also an unholy grip on every Arab country which it is the duty of patriotic Arabs everywhere to combat and smash.

The movement can quite definitely be said to have grown to its present dimensions because of British Policy in Palestine. Had there been no Palestine problem, the movement would scarcely have been heard of, certainly it would have been confined to Syria.

The man looked upon by the Shabiba as the super patriot or William Tell of the Arab movement is the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, although it is doubtful whether he has any other interest except the fight for Palestine's freedom.

The Shabiba movement originated in Syria some twelve years ago and was started by such stalwart nationalists as Fakhri Barudi, Ibrahim Jamil Pasha, Shakib Arsalan, all of Damascus.

Today the organizing centre has shifted to Iraq, and has its brain in the Muthanna Club of Baghdad, a notoriously anti-British institution with branches in every town of Iraq.

Practically every leading politician in Iraq including members of the present cabinet handed by Nuri Pasha, are either in secret sympathy with the movement, or afford their active and open support.

The movement, one must admit, preached patriotism and love of Country in the first instance, honourable and worthy motives in themselves. It would seem to have gone wrong, because of irresponsible leadership and the fact that it allowed fanaticism (due to the mismanagement of Palestine) to get the upper hand.

For example, a very young member of the Shabiba, wherever his branch may be, today believes that Great Britain has broken all her promises made to King Hussain and the Arab world, especially where Palestine is concerned. Hence with one jump they propagate the dangerous theory that no Englishman's word is any longer to be trusted anywhere.

It is of course widely believed also that (a) Great Britain holds a sinister and machiavellian sort of influence over Iraq, and is always at the back of every movement that brings about the fall of a cabinet; (b) that England is now in the process of putting the screw on Bin Saud somewhere, which prevents him from openly siding with Palestine Arabs; (c) that in the Persian Gulf Arab states are of set policy being more and more brought under the direct control of His Majesty's Government, with the result that their so-called independence has become almost a myth. This is all used to help inflame youthful minds.

The immediate aim of the Shabiba movement would appear to be:

(a) To win Syria from the French and bring it under Iraq;

(b) Ditto Trans Jordan from British tutelage and bring her into the Iraq fold;

(c) Ditto Palestine. Though independence for that country is the first objective. Later it can elect to come under Iraq;

(d) Ditto Kuwait and possibly Bahrain.

Iraq having become the centre of a strong modernized Arab Kingdom stretching from the Persian Gulf to the Mediterranean, the Shabiba have as a secondary objective, the rather vague idea of forming a union of all Arab States, after the manner of the U.S.S.R.

Individual rulers who exist now, would be allowed to remain on, but all, to work under a Central Parliament or Council such as exists at Moscow.

The scheme also embraces the Persian Gulf and Southern Arabian Arab states, all today under so-called British protection.

With this grand end in view Baghdad Headquarters have been making every effort during the last 3½ years to plant branches or secret cell organizations in various Persian Gulf Arab states.

We have seen the results of their work in quite recent times in Kuwait, Bahrain and Dubai. I do not think His Majesty's Government representatives saw the danger soon enough, and were inclined to encourage the chief actors than otherwise in the belief that they were liberal minded young men who stood for progress. The anti-English side of the movement seems to have been disregarded.

A feature of this Shabiba movement, and possibly one that made some appeal to a certain type of Englishman, was the fact that members were encouraged to throw overboard old fashioned ideas connected with religion and custom. Under this head comes:

(a) Prejudice against alcoholic drink;
(b) Wearing of oriental garments;
(c) So-called old fashioned religious beliefs.

Their idea was to copy the west in these matters as Kemal, Pasha did for Turkey. Only by adopting western methods and manners, it was preached, could Arabia and Arabs force European nations to respect them.

The above ideas curiously enough met with much popular approval from the Northern and more sophisticated Arab countries (Iraq, Syria, etc.), but it was forgotten by those behind the movement, how deeply religious Arabia proper is, and how offensive such clash of ideas are to the religious minded masses of the peninsula.

Hence we see men like King Bin Saud, the Imam of

Yemen, the rulers of Kuwait, Oman, Bahrain, etc., lining themselves up into opposite camps to the moderns of Iraq and Syria and we incidentally can thus understand the recent failure of the latter in Kuwait.

Clearly the Shabiba leaders in this showed bad tactics, little imagination and a failure to grasp the fact that what may be good for modern Iraq and her free thinking neighbours will not necessarily be good for, or be accepted, in Arabia proper, where an astonishingly deep religious prejudice still prevails. Baghdadis have yet to realize that their brethren further south look upon their efforts to the west as the worst form of irreligions and backsliding.

(B) SHABIBA IN KUWAIT

Up to three years ago there were no institutions, political clubs, or meeting places for youths of any sort in Kuwait, nor had the Shabiba party of Iraq been heard of in the state. The people were simple, happy and contented. They trusted their ruler to see them safely through all their difficulties, and every man had access to his Shaikh whenever he willed.

In religion the populace tended towards a mild form of Wahabiism and were strict in all religious observances.

Above all the Shaikh and his people were pro-British.

The Palestine question had certainly caused anxiety, but Kuwaitis as a whole trusted in Great Britain's sense of justice to put things right, and in their Shaikh's wisdom and the advice he would give to Great Britain in the matter.

Then came visits from men like Fakhri Barudi of Damascus (1935), Yunis Bahri of Baghdad (1934) and other ultra-nationalists intent on organizing Arab Youth everywhere into a sort of defence party for combating the devilish colonial aspirations of Britain and France.

They were supported by a violent press campaign from Iraq against the Colonists of the P.G. (English) and their allies the Amirs of the P.G. Arab states.

Through these men, the youth of Kuwait who sympathised with their brothers in Palestine, were asked both to combat British influence locally and to extend a helping hand to those fighting for freedom in Palestine.

In reply to invitations received subsequently, several young Kuwaitis visited Iraq and Syria and got into touch with the various Shabiba centres that already existed in Baghdad and Damascus. From there they acquired rather wild and superficial ideas on freedom and the necessity of combining to win same etc., etc.

On their return to Kuwait these men began to preach anti-British and anti-Shaikh doctrines--for example, they demanded to know why the K.O.C. employed so many Europeans and Indians to the disadvantage of Arabs etc., and why local education was so behind hand.

Next our visitors to Baghdad and Syria, with the help of funds received from Baghdad, started a Young Mans Club and Association, which they called "Ketlat al Shabab" or Young Mans Block. Most of the members of this association now joined the notorious Al Muthanna Club of Baghdad, and received every encouragement from the members of the 1st Mijliss, which seized power and forced the Shaikh to grant the so-called constitution of July 1938. Nearly all the members of this 1st Mijliss were associates of, and received daily propaganda leaflets from the said Al Muthanna Club, whilst in power. It is not unreasonable to suppose also that the members of the latter club were in touch with the German Embassy in Baghdad, or received encouragement from Rome and Berlin direct.

When the Shaikh of Kuwait regained control of the town early in 1939, and dismissed the 1st Mijliss, his first act was to close down the "Ketlat al Shabab". Its members are now scattered or hiding. Since then no organization, club or political institution has a place in Kuwait, and all the Shaikh's actions in the matter have had the approval of King Bin Saud and of the religious leaders and the conservative masses of the town.

In passing it may be noted that the Shabiba party in Kuwait from the first went out of their way, and in many cases successfully, to get control of the newly started "Boy Scout" movement in Kuwait. In this they faithfully followed the programme and example of Iraq and Syria.

H. R. P. DICKSON

CHIEF LOCAL REPRESENTATIVE.

Kuwait,

12th June, 1939.

APPENDIX 4

APPENDIX 4

COUNCILS OF MINISTERS OF KUWAIT: 1962 to 1976*

1. Royal Decree of January 17, 1962, concerning ministerial assignments:

Jabir al-Ahmad al-Jabir al-Sabah, Finance and Economy
Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim al-Sabah, Electricity and Water
Humud al-Zaid al-Khalid, Justice
Khalid 'Abdullah al-Salim al-Sabah, Customs and Ports
Salim al-'Ali al-Salim al-Sabah, Public Works
Sa'ad'Abdullah al-Salim al-Sabah, Interior
Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir al-Sabah, Guidance and News
Sabah al-Salim al-Sabah, Foreign Affairs
Abdul 'Aziz Hamad al-Saqar, Public Health
Abdullah al-Jabir al-Sabah, Education
Mubarak al-Hamad al-Sabah, Pious Endowments
Mubarak Abdullah al-Ahmad al-Sabah, Post, Telegraph and Telephone
Muhammad Ahmad al-Jabir al-Sabah, Defence
Muhammad Yusif al-Nisf, Social Affairs and Labour
Sabah al-Salim al-Sabah, Crown Prince and Prime Minister

---

*From al-Kitab al-Sanawi (The Yearbook) (Kuwait: Ministry of Guidance and News, 1968-1976).

2. Royal Decree of March 13, 1964, concerning changes in ministerial assignments:

Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim, Guidance and News
Khalid al-Mas'ud al-Fuhayd, Electricity and Water
Yusif al-Sayed Hashim al-Rifa'i, Post, Telegraph and Telephone

3. Royal Decree of December 6, 1964, concerning ministerial assignments:

Jabir al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Commerce and Industry
Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim, Guidance and News
Khalifah al-Khalid al-Ghunaim, Commerce
Khalid al-Ahmad al-Jassar, Pious Endowments
Khalid al-Mas'ud al-Fuhayd, Education
Sa'ad al-Abdullah al-Salim, Interior and Defence
Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Foreign Affairs
Abdul Latif Muhammad al-Thunayan, Public Works
Abdul 'Aziz Husayn, Minister of State for Cabinet Affairs
Humud al-Yusif al-Nisf, Public Health
Abdul 'Aziz Muhammad al-Shay'i, Electricity and Water
Muhammad al-Ahmad al-Ghanim, Justice
Yusif al-Sayid Hashim al-Rifa'i, Post, Telegraph and Telephone
Abdullah al-Mishari al-Rowdan, Social Affairs and Labour

Sabah al-Salim al-Sabah, Crown Prince and Prime Minister

4. Royal Decree January 3, 1965:

Jabir al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Finance and Industry and Commerce

Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim, Guidance and News

Khalid Ahmad al-Jassar, Justice

Khalid al-Mas'ud al-Fuhayd, Education

Khalid al-'Isa al-Salih, Public Works

Sa'ad al-Abdullah al-Salim, Interior and Defence

Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Foreign Affairs

Salih 'Abd al-Malik al-Salih, Post, Telegraph and Telephone

Abdul 'Aziz Abdullah al-Sara'awi, Social Affairs and Labour

Abdullah al-Mishari al-Rowdan, Pious Endowments

Abdullah Ahmad al-Sumait, Electricity and Water

Abdul 'Aziz Ibrahim al-Fulaij, Public Health

Yusef al-Sayid Hasim al-Rifa'i, Minister of State for Cabinet Affairs

Sabah al-Salim al-Sabah, Prime Minister

5. Royal Decree of December 4, 1965:

Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim, Guidance and News

Khalid al-Ahmad al-Jassar, Justice

Khalid al-Mas'ud al-Fuhayd, Education

Khalid al-'Isa al-Salih, Public Works

Sa'ad al-Abdullah al-Salim, Interior and Defence

Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Finance and Oil (Acting), Foreign Affairs

Salih Abdul Malik al-Salih, Post, Telegraph and Telephone

Abdul 'Aziz Abdullah al-Sara'awi Social Affairs and Labour

Abdullah al-Jabir, Commerce and Industry

Abdullah al-Mishari al-Rowdan, Pious Endowments and Islamic Affairs

Abdullah Ahmad al-Sumait, Electricity and Water

Yusif al-Sayid Hashim al-Rifa'i, Minister of State for Cabinet Affairs

Jabir al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Crown Prince and Prime Minister

6. Royal Decree of February 4, 1967:

Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim, Guidance and News

Khalid Ahmad al-Jassar, Justice

Khalid al-'Isa al-Salih, Public Works

Khalid Ahmad Jasim al-Mudhaf, Social Affairs and Labour

Sa'ad al-Abdullah al-Salim, Interior and Defence

Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Foreign Affairs

Salih Abdul Malik al-Salih, Education and Post, Telegraph and Telephone (Acting)

Abdullah al-Jabir, Commerce and Industry

Abdullah al-Mishari al-Rowdan, Pious Endowments
and Islamic Affairs
Abdullah Ahmad al-Sumait, Electricity and Water
Abdul Rahman Salim al-'Atiqi, Finance and Oil
Abdul 'Aziz Ibrahim al-Fulaij, Public Health
Yusif al-Sayid Hashim al-Rifa'i, Minister of
State for Cabinet Affairs
Jabir al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Crown Prince and Prime Minister

7. Royal Decree of April 30, 1967:

Abdul 'Aziz Abdullah al-Sara'awi, Post, Telegraph
and Telephone

8. Royal Decree of February 2, 1971:

Jasim Khalid Dawud al-Marzuq, Justice and
Education (Acting)
Hamad Mubarak al-'Aiyar, Social Affairs and Labour
Humud Yusif al-Nisef, Public Works
Khalid Sulayman al-Adasani, Commerce and Industry
Rashid Abdullah al-Farhan, Pious Endowments and
Islamic Affairs
Sa'ad al-Abdullah al-Sabah, Interior and Defence
Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Foreign Affairs and
Information (Acting)
Abdul Rahman Salim al-'Atiqi, Finance and Oil
Abdul Razzaq Mishari al-'Adawani, Public Health
Abdul 'Aziz Husayn, Minister of State for Cabinet
Affairs

Abdul 'Aziz Abdullah al-Sara'awi, Post, Telegraph and Telephone, and Electricity and Water (Acting)

9. Royal Decree of February 15, 1971:

Jasim Khalid Dawud al-Marzuq, Education

Mahmud Ahmad Abdul Latif al-Hamad, Justice

Abdullah Yusif al-Ghanim, Electricity and Water

10. Royal Decree of February 9, 1975:

Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim al-Sabah, Information and Deputy Prime Minister

Jasim Khalid al-Dawud al-Marzuq, Education

Hamad Mubarak al-'Aiyar, Housing

Ahmad Yusif al-Nisf, Public Works

Salim Sabah al-Salim al-Sabah, Social Affairs and Labour

Saad al-Abdullah al-Salim al-Sabah, Interior and Defence

Sulayman Humud al-Zaid al-Khalid, Communications

Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir al-Sabah, Foreign Affairs

Abdul Rahman Salim al-'Atiqi, Finance

Abdul Rahman Abdullah al-'Awadi, Public Health

Abdul 'Aziz Husayn, Minister of State for Cabinet Affairs

Abdullah Yusif Ahmad al-Ghanim, Electricity and Water

Abdul Muttalib Abdul Husayn al-Kazimi, Oil

Abdul Wahhab Yusif al-Nafisi, Commerce and Industry

Jabir al-Ahmad al-Jabir, Crown Prince and Prime Minister

11. Royal Decree of September 6, 1976:

Jabir al-'Ali al-Salim al-Sabah, Deputy Prime Minister and Information

Jasim Khalid al-Dawud al-Marzuq, Education

Hamad Mubarak al-'Aiyar, Housing

Humud Yusif al-Nisf, Public Works

Salim Sabah al-Salim al-Sabah, Social Affairs and Labour

Sa'ad al-Abdullah al-Salim al-Sabah, Interior and Defence

Salman al-Duaych al-Sabah, Minister of State for Administrative and Legal Affairs

Sulayman Humud al-Zaid al-Khalid, Communications

Sabah al-Ahmad al-Jabir al-Sabah, Foreign Affairs

Abdul Rahman Salim al-'Atiqi, Finance

Abdul Rahman Abdullah al-'Awadi, Public Health

Abdul 'Aziz Husayn, Minister of State for Cabinet Affairs

Abdullah Ibrahim al-Mufarrij, Justice

Abdullah Yusif Ahmad al-Ghanim, Electricity and Water

Abdul Muttalib Abdul al-Husayn al-Kazimi, Oil

Abdul Wahhab Yusif al-Nafisi Commerce and Industry

Muhammad Yusif al-Adasani, Planning

Yusif Jasim al-Haji, Pious Endowments and Islamic Affairs

* * * * * * * * * * *

Details on Selected Kuwaiti Shareholding Companies (Public and Private Subscription)

Capital: Banks and Investment Companies

1. Central Bank of Kuwait: created by an Amiri Decree in 1968, with the objective of dealing with the state accounts, controlling commercial bank transactions, regulating clearance operations and conducting economic studies for the orientation of the country's financial and banking policy. Effective January 15, 1972, the bank took charge of all financial and commercial transactions relevant to ministries and various governmental bodies and institutions. The function of the issuance of money was taken over by the Kuwait Currency Board. Governor of the Central Bank: Abbas Hamza Husayn.

2. Savings and Credit Bank: created in 1960 with an initial capital of K.D. 7.5 million. The scope of the bank

is to grant long and short term loans with low rates of interest to the private sector and private citizens especially for housing purposes. The capital was increased gradually to K.D. 20 million in 1965, K.D. 25 million in 1969, K.D. 35 million in 1971 and K.D. 80 million in 1974. Members of the Board: Ahmad Zaid al-Sarhan, Chairman; 'Abdin Habib al-Sayigh, Deputy Chairman.

3. Industrial Development Bank: created in December 1973 with a capital of K.D. 10 million, divided into one million shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. It is 49 per cent government owned and 51 per cent banks, insurance companies and industries. (Actual government participation, then, is much higher because of its participation in these companies). Scope of the bank is to promote the industrial sector by granting long and medium term loans. Members of the Board: Mohammad al-Sharekh; Ahmed Salih al-Ajiri (represents Council of Ministers); Abdul Rassoul Abu al-Hassan (represents the Central Bank); Fawzi Sultan (represents the commercial banks); Abdul Rahman al-Ghunaim (represents the insurance companies); Khalid al-Saqr (represents the Kuwait Flour Mills Co.); and Mohammad al-Atiqi (represents the National Industries Company).

4. National Bank of Kuwait: the first local bank, established May 19, 1952, with an initial capital of K.D. 6.7 million, divided into 891,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 7.5 In 1973, the capital was raised to K.D. 7.5 million. Members of the Board: Yacoub Yusef al-Hamad, President; Mohammad Abdul Mohsen al-Khorafi, Vice President; Yusif Abdul 'Aziz al-Fulaij; Khalid Abdul Latif al-Hamad; Humud al-Zaid al-Khalid; Jassim Hamad al-Saqr; Mohammad Abdul Rahman al-Bahar; Mustafa Jassim Boodai; Marzuk Abdul Wahab al-Marzuk; Musa'id Abdullah al-Sayer. This bank works closely with the Bank of England.

5. The Commercial Bank of Kuwait: created in June 1960 with a capital of K.D. 3 million, divided into 400,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 7.5. In 1973 the capital was raised to K.D. 4.2 million. Members of the Board: Abdul 'Aziz al-Ahmad al-Bahar, Chairman; Abdul Mohsen Faisal al-Thuwaini, Deputy Chairman; Faisal S'ud al-Zabban; Jasim al-Ahmad al-Bahar; Abdul Mohsin Faisal al-Thuwaini; Yacub Yusif al-Nafisi; Abdul Rahman Khalid al-Ghunaim; Barrak Abdul Mohsin al-Mutayri. This bank works closely with the Chase Manhattan Bank in the U.S.

6. The Gulf Bank: created in October 1960 with an initial capital of K.D. 2.5 million, divided into 330,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 7.5. In 1973, the capital was raised to K.D. 2.97, and in 1974 to K.D. 3.27. Members of the Board: Khaled Yusif al-Mutawa', Chairman; Ali Abdul Rahman al-Bahar, Deputy Chairman; Mustapha Sultan; Dawud Musa'id al-Salih; Khalid Fulaij al-Fulaij; Abdullah Mohammed al-Mishari; Abdul 'Aziz al-Rashid; Jassim Mohammed al-Wazzan; Abdul Latif Abdullah al-Mehri; Nasir Abdul Wahhab al-Qutami; 'Aziz al-Fulaij. This bank is also associated with the U.S.

7. al-Ahli Bank of Kuwait: created in June 1967 with an initial capital of K.D. 2 million, divided into 200,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. In 1974, the capital was raised to K.D. 2.5 million, and in 1975 to K.D. 4 million. This bank is associated with Credit Lyonnais of France. Members of the Board: Sa'ud al-Abdul al-Razzak, Chairman; Khalifah Yusif al-Rumi, Deputy Chairman; Abdul Rahman al-Zamel; Abdul Samad al-Ma'arifi; Mohammad Abdul 'Aziz al-Wazzan; Murad Yusif Bahbahani; Yacoub Yusif Bahbahani.

8. The Bank of Kuwait and the Middle East: the oldest bank in Kuwait, it was formally British. Created under the new name in January 1971 with a capital of K.D. 2 million, divided into 200,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. It is 51 per cent government owned and 49 per cent privately owned. The capital was raised to K.D. 4 million in April 1975. This bank has replaced the British Bank of the Middle East, the sole foreign bank established in Kuwait after the expiration of the 30 years concession. Members of the Board: Fahad Abdul Rahman al-Bahar, Chairman; Ali Mohammad al-"Utaibi Deputy Chairman; Fawzi Hamad al-Sultan, Managing Director; Abdul Majid Sayid Hashim al-Gharaballi; Abdul Wahhab Ahmad al-Fahad; Barrak Abdul Mohsen al-Tukhaim; Sa'ud Abdul 'Aziz al-Umar; Shakir Abdul Majid al-Kazimi; Usamah Zaid al-Kazimi.

9. Kuwait Foreign Trading, Contracting and Investment Company: created in December 1964 with a capital of K.D. 10 million, divided into 1 million shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. The capital was raised in 1974 to K.D. 20 million. The company belongs 80 per cent to the government and 20 per cent to the private sector. It is concerned with financial investments, direct participation, or through third parties, in economic projects, both internal and

external. The kinds of operations then are industrial financing, investment, banking and real estate. Members of the Board: Abdul Wahab Ali al-Tammar, Chairman; Badr Bazi al-Yasin, Deputy Chairman; Faisal Abdul Razzak al-Kazimi; Haidar Abdul Razzak al-Shihabi; Saleh Abdullah al-Shalfan; Faisal Khalid Jaafar; Abdul Rahman al-Kaoud; Faisal Abdul Mohsin al-Khatrash; Ghazi Sa'ud al-Fulaij; Abdul Mohsin Yusif al-Hanif.

10. Kuwait Investment Company: created in November 1961 with a capital of K.D. 7.5 million, divided into 750,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. It is 50 per cent government owned and 50 per cent private sector. Capital of the company was raised to K.D. 8.3 about 1974. The scope of the company includes: investments in general; promotion of other companies; the transactions with shares in government or private sector companies; the emission of bonds by the International Bank. Members of the Board: Badr Ali al-Dawud, Chairman; Badr al-Sheikh al-'Issa, deputy Chairman; Hamad al-Bahar, General Manager; Ahmad Salih al-Sha'yi'; Abdul 'Aziz Abdullah al-Shalfan; Abdul Latif Yusif al-Hamad, Nasir Mohammad Abdul Mohsin al-Khorafi; Fu'ad Abdul Rahman al-Bahar; Nasir Musa'id al-Sayer.

11. Kuwait International Financing Company: created by a Ministry of Trade decree, No. 39, in 1974, with a capital of K.D. 2 million, divided into 200,000 shares, distributed as follows:

	Shares	K.D.
Faisal al-Fulaij	50,000	500,000
W. J. Towell	42,000	420,000
Sayid Akbar	2,000	20,000
Hassan Ali Ibrahim	10,000	100,000
Credit and Commerce (Int. Bank (Luxembourg)	96,000	960,000

51 per cent of capital in Kuwaiti hands and 49 per cent in foreign hands. The scope of the company was 1) loands and monetary transactions (the company was not allowed to accept deposits; 2) to plan private and particulars investment policies; 3) advise on monetary planning and international stock operations; 4) finance block investments. The company is now closed.

12. Kuwait International Investment Company: created in September 1973 with a capital of K.D. 10 million, divided into 1,250,000 shares. Activities of the company include financial, banking and investment operations in and out of Kuwait. The company is wholly private. Members of the Board: Usama Zaid al-Kazimi, Chairman; Salah Fahad al-Marzuk, Deputy Chairman; Ahmed Yusif Bahbahani; Jasim Mohammad

Abdul Rahman al-Bahar; Khalifah Yusif al-Rumi; Mohammad Darwish al-Aradi; Wa'il Jasim al-Saqr; Yusif Abdul 'Aziz al-Wazzan.

13. Kuwait Re-Insurance Company: created in 1972, with a capital of K.D. 1 million, divided into 100,000 shares. Distributed as follows: 5 local commercial banks, 3 local insurance companies, Kuwait Investment Company, and Kuwait Foreign Trading, Contracting and Investment Company. Each has 10,000 shares. Members of the Board: Mohammad Yusif al-Nisf, Chairman; Abdul Rahman Khaled al-Ghunaim, Vice Chairman; Badr Sultan al-'Issa; Mustafa Jasim Boodai; Abdul Mohsin al-Thuwaini; Khalid al-Fulaij; Khalifah Yusif al-Rumi; Ali Mohammad al-Oteibi; Ahmed Salih al-Sha'ya; Haider Abdul Razzak al-Shehabi.

14. Salhiya Real Estate Company: created in September 1974 with a capital of K.D. 5.5 million, divided into 550,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. The scope of the company consists in all investment operations, construction and real estate contracting. Members of the Board: Ghazi Fahad al-Nafisi, Chairman; Barrak Abdul Mohsin al-Mutayri, Deputy Chairman; Salah Fahd Abdul 'Aziz al-Marzuk, Badr Sultan al-'Issa; Fawzi Musa'id al-Saleh;

Abdul Razzak Yusif al-Khamis; Abdul 'Aziz Sa'ud al-Babtain; Hasan Abd al-Musa.

15. Real Estate Investment Consortium: created in Kuwait in July 1974, with a capital of K.D. 5 million, divided into 500,000 shares. The scope of the company consists of all kinds of real estate operations in Arab countries (Kuwait excluded) and foreign countries. Members of the Board: Sa'ad Ali al-Nahib, Chairman; Abdul Razzak Abdul Hamid al-Sani'; Abdul Mohsin Ibrahim al-Faris; Ahmad Ali al-Duaij; Abdul Muttalib,Abdul Mohsin al-Kazimi.

16. International Financial Advisers Company: created in January 1974, with a capital of K.D. 0.5 million, divided into 10,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 50. The scope of the company includes: financial consultation to companies in Kuwait and the Middle East; study the emission of shares and obligations relevant to new companies; purchase and sales of shares. The company is 55 per cent private Kuwaiti and 45 per cent non-Kuwaiti. Founding Members: Abdul 'Aziz al-Salih al-Mutawwa', Sheikh Nasir Sabah al-Ahmad al-Sabah; Sheikh Ali al-Jabir al-Ali al-Sabah; Fawzi Hamad Sultan; Abdullah Ali al-Muzaini; Marzuk Ali al-Bahar;

Fawzi Musa'id al-Salih; Adil Ali al-Hamad; Worms & Co. (French Bank, 15 per cent); Robert Flemming & Co. (Great Britain, 15 per cent); William Kent (U.S.A., 15 per cent).

17. National Trading and Industrial Investment Company: created in April 1974, with a capital of K.D. 796,000, divided into 79,600 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. The company is a closed company in the hands of 81 members, mostly of the al-Sultan, al-Faris, al-'Issa, al-Salim, al-Gharabali, al-Khalid and al-Sharhan families.

18. Arab Financial Consultants: created in Kuwait in December 1974 with a capital of K.D. 0.5 million. It is 51 per cent Kuwaiti and 49 per cent foreign. The scope of the company is financial consultation, study of economic projects, and dealing with international stocks and bonds. Chairman: Khalid al-'Issa al-Saleh; Vice Chairman: Abdullah al-Sumait.

19. Kuwait Financial Center: created in Kuwait in July 1974, with a capital of K.D. 3.5 million, divided into 350,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. The scope of the company consists in financing commercial operations (import and export). Also, the scope is to play the role of intermediary,

to trade in precious metals, and to finance projects and provide services to economically viable enterprises. Shareholders: Sheikh Ali Sabah Ali Salim al-Sabah (shares, 209,000); International Bank, Washington (shares, 75,000); Lulwa Khalifah al-Ghanim (shares, 20,000); Altbi Fahad al-Marzuk (shares, 10,000); Khalid al-Yusif al-Marzouk (shares, 10,000); Abdul Rahman Khalid al-Ghunaim (shares, 10,000); Sheikh Nassir Sabah al-Ahmadal-Sabah (shares, 10,000); Abdul Mohsen Nassir al-Jea'n (shares, 5,000); Jassim Mohammad Osman al-Musa (shares, 1,000).

20. Afro-Arab Company for Investment and International Trade: created in July 1972 with a capital of K.D. 2 million, divided into 200,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. Activities of the company comprise all kinds of investment in the economic, agricultural, industrial, mining and housing sectors; all international commercial operations (exchange and finance); construction and development projects, especially in Arab and African countries. Members of the Board: Abdul Wahab Ali al-Tammar, Chairman; Sulayman Ahmad al-Haddad, Deputy Chairman; Mohammed Ahmad al-Ghanim; Ibrahim Abdul Karim al-Ibrahim; Fu'ad Mustafa Awad (Misr Lebanon Bank); Ahmad Abdullah al-Nuri

(Kuwait Investment Company).

21. Kuwait Tourism and Recreational Enterprises Company: created in April 1974 with a capital of K.D. 4 million, divided into 400,000 shares distributed to 14 government and private firms. Members of the Board: Khalid Yusif al-Marzuk, Chairman; Saleh Shihab, Deputy Chairman; Ghazi Sa'ud al-Fulaij, Managing Director; Abd Abdul Mohsen al-Rifa'i; Fu'ad Abdul Mohsen al-Matruk; Abdul Rahman Mubarak al-Kaoud; Yusif Nasir al-Huti Abdullah Eid al-Nasir.

Industrial:

1. National Industries: created in 1960, with an initial capital of K.D. 1.5 million, raised to K.D. 1.8 million in 1969, K.D. 2.16 million in 1973 and K.D. 2.52 million in 1975. Government is the major shareholder. The company manufactures building materials. It has government protection, and for any large cement job for the government, it receives the contract. Members of the Board: Mohammad Hamad al-Atiqi; Sa'ad Mohammad al-Sa'ad; Khalid Hussayn al-'Issa; Sulayman Humud al-Khalid; Sabah Mohammed al-Ra'is; Abdullah al-Dakhil al-Rusheid; Abdul Hamid Hussayn; 'Issa al-Shahin; Fawzi Mohammad al-Khorafi; Abdul 'Aziz al-Mutawa.

2. Kuwait Contracting Company: emerged from 60 per cent Kuwaiti interests (National Real Estate Company) and 40 per cent Yugoslavian interests. The capital of the company is K.D. 2 million. The scope of the company consists in general contracting operations in Kuwait and abroad as well as import of building materials for those projects.

3. Kuwait Chemical Fertilizer Company-Petrochemical Industries: created in 1963, with an initial capital of K.D. 32 million of which 89.5 per cent is government, five per cent Kuwait National Petroleum Company, and 5.5 per cent is private sector. Members of the Board: Abdul Baqi Abdullah al-Nuri; Ali Hassan al-Gaoud; Badr al-Sayid Abdul Wahab al-Rifa'i; Hasan Ahmed al-Nassar; Hamad Abdul 'Aziz al-Saqr; Abdul 'Aziz Habib al-Zahir; Abdul 'Aziz Sultan al-'Issa; Abdul Wahab Mohammad Aqil Mohammed Abdul Rahim Taki; Mubarak Sa'ud al-Obyadi; Abdul Latif Hamad al-Falah.

4. Kuwait Prefabricated Building: a private company associated with the Savings and Credit Bank for large housing projects. Members of the Board: Abdul Latif Yusif al-Hamad; Sami al-Mishri; Abdullah Mubarak al-Sabij; Sa'ad Mohammad al-Sa'ad; Khalid

Hussayn al-'Issa; Hamid al-Salam Shu'ayb; Hussayn Mohammad al-Dallal; Salih Hamad al-Yahya; Saad Abdul Latif al-Dosari; Faisal Yusif al-Qutami.

5. Kuwait Maritime Mercantile Company: formerly Grey MacKenzie. In 1965, an Amiri Decree was declared whereby every company operating in Kuwait should have 51 per cent Kuwaiti participation. Therefore Grey MacKenzie, a long established firm in the Gulf dealing mainly with shipping and general trade, had to abide to the new regulation by converting to 51 per cent Kuwaiti participation. The company was created with a capital of K.D. 100,000. Kuwaiti shareholders: Fahad Abdul Aziz Abdul Mohsin al-Rashid; Faisal Mansur al-Mazidi; Abdullah Salih al-Bassam; Khalid Abdullah al-Ma'uf; Ahmad Abdul Karim Rahim Wahidi.

6. International Contracting Company: created in Kuwait in December 1974 by a Ministry of Trade Decree, No. 48, with a capital of K.D. 2 million, divided into 40,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 50. The scope of the company consists of all operations in general contracting in Kuwait and abroad (civil engineering, electrical, roads, sewage, ports and bridges) pertinent to the private or public sector. Members of the Board: Abdul Wahhab

Ali al-Tammar; Abdul Mohsin al-Kattan, Faisal al-Kazimi; Nasir Mohammed al-Khorafi, Abdul Mohsin Faisal al-Thuwaini; Ahmed al-Nuri.

7. Kuwait Cement Company: created in 1968 with a capital of K.D. 2.5 million, divided into 250,000 shares of K.D. 10 each. In 1974, capital was raised to K.D. 3 million, and in 1975 to K.D. 5 million. It is a wholly private company. Members of the Board: Rashid Abdul Aziz al-Rashid; Sulayman Khalid al-Ghunaim; Mohammed Yusif al-Rumi; Abdul Samad Abdullah al-Ma'arafi; Abdul Latif Abdullah al-Muhri; Abdullah Mohammed al-Mishari; Fahad Abdul Rahman al-Mo'ajil; Fahad Abd al-Hassawi; Mohammed Mahmoud Maduh, Faisal Abdul Razzak al-Khalid, Talib Bahbani.

8. Kuwait United Poultry Company: created in October 1974 with a capital of K.D. 4 million, divided into 500,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 8. The scope of the company is to create and establish farms for the production of eggs and poultry in Kuwait. Another goal is to trade in animal feed, to create freezers, and to trade poultry or similar products. The company is private, and there are 69 shareholders in all.

9. Kuwait Oil Tanker Company: created in 1957 with a capital of K.D. 11.5 million, distributed in 1,533,692 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 7.5. The company was wholly privately owned until 1975 when the government took it over and compensated all shareholders. At the time of takeover, the company owned a fleet of seven tankers with a total deadweight tonnage of 1.1 million. The Members of the Board were: Abdul 'Aziz al-Saqr; Humud al-Zaid al-Khalid; Yusif Abdul 'Aziz al-Fulaij; Abdul 'Aziz al-Sha'i; Khalid Abdul Latif al-Hamad; Mohammad Abdul Mohsin al-Khorafi; Badr al-Salim al-Abdul-wahab Marzuk Khalid al-Ghunaim; Yacub al-Nafisi; Abdul Mohsen al-Marzuk; Abdul Razzak al-Khalid al-Sayid; Fu'ad al-Ghanim.

10. Kuwait Flour Mills: created in 1961 with 50 per cent government participation and 50 per cent private participation, with a capital of K.D. 2 million, divided into 200,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. Members of the Board: Ali Abdul Rahman al-Bahar; Nasir Abdul Wahhab al-Qutami; Ali Yusif al-Matruk; Khalid Abdullah al-Saqr; Khalid Ali al-Khorafi; Khalid Ahmed al-Humaidi; Ali Sa'dun al-Badr; Sa'ud Khalid al-Dawud al-

Marzuk; Abdul Husayn Bahman; Abdul 'Aziz Sa'ud al-Fulaij.

11. Kuwait Metal Pipe Industries: created in 1966 with a capital of K.D. 4.8 million, divided into 480,000 shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. Scope of the company is to make various kinds of pipes for the oil industry. No government participation. Members of the Board: Fawzi Musa'id al-Salih; Fahad Nayif al-Dabbus; Abdullah 'Issa al-Salih; Murad Youssef Bahbahani; Hamad Ahmed al-Bahar; Mohammad Darwish al-Arabi; Abdullah Ismail Behbehani; Mahmud Khalid al-Adasani.

12. United Fisheries: created in May 1972, following the merger of three local fishing companies established in Kuwait. The new company has a fleet of 180 units, of which there are five mother boats for the processing and storage of the catch. 95 per cent of the catch is exported and 5 per cent serves the needs of the local market. The company has a capital of K.D. 10 million divided into one million shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. The government owns 48 per cent of the shares. Members of the Board: Sheikh Nasir Sabah al-Sabah; Husayn Makki al-Juma'a; Abdul Jalil Sayid Hasan Bahbahani; Ahmad Hamza Mustafa; Faisal

Mansur al-Mazidi; Mohammad Hasan al-Attar; Nuri Musa'id al-Salih; Yacub Yusif al-Jaw-an.

13. Kuwait Shipbuilding and Repair Company: created in 1974 with a capital of K.D. 10 million, divided into 1 million shares, each with a nominal value of K.D. 10. A wholly private sector company whose scope is all maritime operations (drudging and maintenance operations), ports and vessel repairs. Shareholders: Kuwait United Fisheries, 125,000; al-Rashed Industrial Contracting Company, 27,500; Hamad Abdullah al-Saqr, 27,500; Sheikh Mubarak Abd al-Ahmad al-Sabah, 20,000; Faisal Yusif al-Marzuk, 20,000; Salim Sa'id al-Hunaidi, 15,000; Abd Abdul Rahman al Fereih, 15,000.